



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

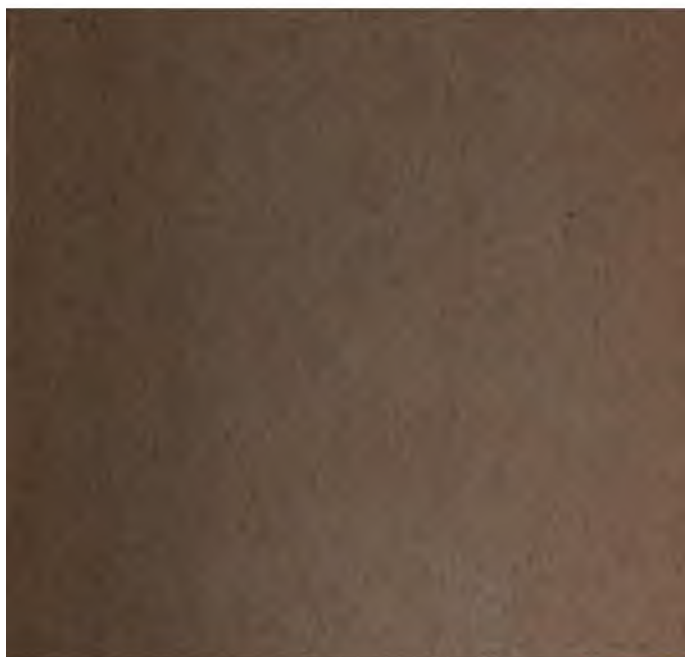
### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



3 3433 07491063 3











# PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE;

A DRAMATIC ROMANCE,

IN TWO PARTS.

BY

HENRY TAYLOR, ESQ.

"Dramatica Poesis est veluti Historia spectabilis."

BACON DE AUGMENTIS.

VOL. I.

CAMBRIDGE AND BOSTON:

JAMES MUNROE AND COMPANY.

M DCCC XXXV.

h. r. b.



THE NEW YORK  
PUBLIC LIBRARY  
828888  
ASTOR, LENOX AND  
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS  
R 1919 L

CAMBRIDGE PRESS :  
METCALF, TORRY, AND BALLOU.

TO

ROBERT SOUTHEY, ESQ.

---

THIS Book, though it should travel far and wide  
As ever unripe Author's quick conceit  
Could feign his page dispersed, should nowhere meet  
A friendlier censor than by Greta's side,  
A warmer welcome than at Skiddaw's feet.  
Unhappily infrequent in the land  
Is now the sage seclusion, the retreat  
Sacred to letters : but let this command  
Fitting acknowledgment, — that time and tide  
Saw never yet embellished with more grace  
Outward and inward, with more charms allied,  
With honors more attended, man or place,  
Than where by Greta's silver current sweet  
Learning still keeps one calm sequestered seat.





## P R E F A C E.

---

As this work, consisting of two Plays and an Interlude, is equal in length to about six such plays as are adapted to representation, it is almost unnecessary to say that it was not intended for the stage. It is properly an Historical Romance, cast in a dramatic and rythmical form. Historic truth is preserved in it, as far as the material events are concerned—of course with the usual exception of such occasional dilatations and compressions of time as are required in dramatic composition.

This is, perhaps, all the explanation which is absolutely required in this place ; but, as there may be readers who feel an inclination to learn something of an author's tastes in poetry before they proceed to the perusal of what he has written, I will take the opportunity which a

preface affords me of expressing my opinions upon two or three of the most prominent features in the present state of poetical literature ; and I shall do so the more gladly, because I am apprehensive, that without some previous intimations of the kind, my work might occasion disappointment to the admirers of that highly colored poetry which has been popular in these latter years. If in the strictures, which, with this object, I may be led to make upon authors of great reputation, I should appear to be wanting in the respect due to prevalent opinions, — opinions which, from the very circumstance of their prevalence, must be assumed to be partaken by many to whom deference is owing, — I trust that it will be attributed, not to any spirit of dogmatism, far less to a love of disparagement ; but simply to the desire of exercising, with a discreet freedom, that humble independence of judgment in matters of taste, which it is for the advantage of literature that every man of letters should maintain.

My views have not, in truth, been founded upon any predisposition to depreciate the popular poetry of the times. It will always produce

a powerful impression upon very young readers, and I scarcely think that it can have been more admired by any than by myself, when I was included in that category. I have not ceased to admire this poetry in its degree; and the interlude which I have inserted between these plays will show, that, to a limited extent, I have been desirous even to cultivate and employ it: but I am unable to concur in opinion with those who would place it in the foremost ranks of the art: nor does it seem to have been capable of sustaining itself quite firmly in the very high degree of public estimation in which it was held at its first appearance, and for some years afterwards. The poetical taste to which some of the popular poets of this century gave birth, appears at present to maintain a more unshaken dominion over the writers of poetry, than over its readers.

These poets were characterized by great sensibility and fervor, by a profusion of imagery, by force and beauty of language, and by a versification peculiarly easy and adroit, and abounding in that sort of melody, which, by its very obvious cadences, *makes itself* most pleasing to

an unpractised ear. They exhibited, therefore, many of the most attractive graces and charms of poetry—its vital warmth not less than its external embellishments; and had not the admiration which they excited, tended to produce an indifference to higher, graver, and more various endowments, no one would have said that it was, in any evil sense, excessive. But from this unbounded indulgence in the mere luxuries of poetry, has there not ensued a want of adequate appreciation for its intellectual and immortal part? I confess, that such seems to me to have been both the actual and the natural result; and I can hardly believe the public taste to have been in a healthy state, whilst the most approved poetry of past times was almost unread. We may now, perhaps, be turning back to it; but it was not, as far as I can judge, till more than a quarter of a century had expired, that any signs of re-action could be discerned. Till then, the elder luminaries of our poetical literature were obscured, or little regarded; and we sate with dazzled eyes at a high festival of poetry, where, as at the funeral of Arvalan, the torch-light put out the star-light.

So keen was the sense of what the new poets possessed, that it never seemed to be felt that any thing was deficient in them. Yet their deficiencies were not unimportant. They wanted, in the first place, subject matter. A feeling came more easily to them than a reflection, and an image was always at hand when a thought was not forthcoming. Either they did not look upon mankind with observant eyes, or they did not feel it to be any part of their vocation to turn what they saw to account. It did not belong to poetry, in their apprehension, to thread the mazes of life in all its classes and under all its circumstances, common as well as romantic, and, seeing all things, to infer and to instruct : on the contrary, it was to stand aloof from every thing that is plain and true ; to have little concern with what is rational or wise ; it was to be, like music, a moving and enchanting art, acting upon the fancy, the affections, the passions, but scarcely connected with the exercise of the intellectual faculties. These writers had, indeed, adopted a tone of language which is hardly consistent with the state of mind in which a man *makes use of his* understanding.



The realities of nature, and the truths which they suggest, would have seemed cold and incongruous, if suffered to mix with the strains of impassioned sentiment and glowing imagery in which they poured themselves forth. Spirit was not to be debased by any union with matter, in their effusions; dwelling, as they did, in a region of poetical sentiment which did not permit them to walk upon the common earth, or to breathe the common air.

Writers, however, whose appeal is made so exclusively to the excitabilities of mankind, will not find it possible to work upon them continuously without a diminishing effect. Poetry of which sense is not the basis, though it may be excellent of its kind, will not long be reputed to be poetry of the highest order. It may move the feelings and charm the fancy; but failing to satisfy the understanding, it will not take permanent possession of the strong-holds of fame. Lord Byron, in giving the most admirable example of this species of poetry, undoubtedly gave the strongest impulse to the appetite for it. Yet this impulse is losing its force, and even Lord Byron himself repudiated, in the latter

years of his life, the poetical taste which he had espoused and propagated. The constitution of this writer's mind is not difficult to understand, and sufficiently explains the growth of his taste.

Had he united a philosophical intellect to his peculiarly poetical temperament, he would probably have been the greatest poet of his age. But no man can be a very great poet who is not also a great philosopher. Whatever Lord Byron's natural powers may have been, idleness and light reading, an early acquisition of popularity by the exercise of a single talent, and an absorbing and contracting self-love, confined the field of his operations within narrow limits. He was in knowledge merely a man of Belles-lettres; nor does he appear at any time to have betaken himself to such studies as would have tended to the cultivation and discipline of his reasoning powers, or the enlargement of his mind. He had, however, not only an ardent and brilliant imagination, but a clear understanding; and the signs both of what he had and of what he wanted, are apparent in his poetry. There is apparent in it a working and moulding

spirit, with a want of material to work up,— a great command of language, with a want of any views or reflections which, if unembellished by imagery, or unassociated with passionate feelings, it would be very much worth while to express. Page after page throughout his earlier poems, there is the same uninformed energy at work upon the same old feelings; and when at last he became conscious that a theme was wanting, it was at a period of life when no man will consent to put himself to school; he could change his style and manner, but he could not change his moral and intellectual being, nor extend the sphere of his contemplations to subjects which were alien in *spirit* from those with which he had been hitherto, whether in life or in literature, exclusively conversant: in short, his mind was past the period of growth; there was (to use a phrase of Ben Jonson's) an *ingeni-stitium*, or wit-stand: he felt, apparently, that the food on which he had fed his mind had not been invigorating; but it could no longer bear a stronger diet, and he turned his genius loose to rove over the surface of society, content with such light observations upon life and manners

as any acute man of the world might collect upon his travels, and conscious that he could recommend them to attention by such wit, brilliancy, dexterity of phrase, and versatility of fancy, as no one but himself could command.

His misanthropy was probably, like his tenderness, not practical, but merely matter of imagination, assumed for purposes of effect. But whilst his ignorance of the better elements of human nature may be believed to have been in a great measure affected, it is not to be supposed that he knew of them with a large and appreciating knowledge. Yet that knowledge of human nature which is exclusive of what is good in it, is, to say the least, as shallow and imperfect as that which is exclusive of what is evil. There is no such thing as philosophical misanthropy; and if a misanthropical spirit, be it genuine or affected, be found to pervade a man's writings, that spirit may be poetical as far as it goes, but being at fault in its philosophy, it will never, in the long run of time, approve itself equal to the institution of a poetical fame of the highest and most durable order.

These imperfections are especially observable in the portraitures of human character (if such it can be called) which are most prominent in Lord Byron's works. There is nothing in them of the mixture and modification, — nothing of the composite fabric which Nature has assigned to Man. They exhibit rather passions personified, than persons impassioned. But there is a yet worse defect in them. Lord Byron's conception of a hero is an evidence, not only of scanty materials of knowledge from which to construct the ideal of a human being, but also of a want of perception of what is great or noble in our nature. His heroes are creatures abandoned to their passions, and essentially, therefore, weak of mind. Strip them of the veil of mystery and the trappings of poetry, resolve them into their plain realities, and they are such beings as, in the eyes of a man of masculine judgment, would certainly excite no sentiment of admiration, even if they did not provoke contempt. When the conduct and feelings attributed to them are reduced into prose, and brought to the test of a rational consideration, they must be perceived to be beings in whom there is no strength, except that of

their intensely selfish passions, — in whom all is vanity; their exertions being for vanity under the name of love, or revenge, and their sufferings for vanity under the name of pride. If such beings as these are to be regarded as heroidal, where in human nature are we to look for what is low in sentiment, or infirm in character?

How nobly opposite to Lord Byron's, was Shakspeare's conception of a hero: —

“ Give me that man

That is not passion's slave, and I will wear him

In my heart's core; aye, in my heart of heart.”

Lord Byron's genius, however, was powerful enough to cast a highly romantic coloring over these puerile creations, and to impart the charms of forcible expression, fervid feeling, and beautiful imagery, to thoughts in themselves not more remarkable for novelty than for soundness. The public required nothing more; and if he himself was brought latterly to a sense of his deficiencies of knowledge and general intellectual cultivation, it must have been more by the effect of time in so far maturing his very vigorous understanding, than by any correction from without. No writer of *his age has had less of the benefits*

of adverse criticism. His own judgment, and that of his readers, have been left equally without check or guidance; and the decline in popular estimation which he has suffered for these last few years, may be rather attributed to a satiated appetite on the part of the public, than to a rectified taste: for those who have ceased to admire his poetry so ardently as they did, do not appear in general to have transferred their admiration to any worthier object.

Nor can it be said that anything better, or indeed anything half so good, has been subsequently produced. The poetry of the day, whilst it is greatly inferior in quality, continues to be like his in kind. It consists of little more than a poetical diction, an arrangement of words implying a sensitive state of mind, and therefore more or less calculated to excite corresponding associations, though, for the most part, not pertinently to any matter in hand; a diction which addresses itself to the sentient, not the percipient, properties of the mind, and displays merely symbols or types of feelings, which might exist with equal force in a being the most barren of understanding.

It may be proper, however, to take a distinction between the ordinary Byronian poetry, and that which may be considered as the offspring, either in the first or second generation, of the genius of Mr. Shelley. Mr. Shelley was a person of a more powerful and expansive imagination than Lord Byron, but he was inferior to him in those practical abilities, which (unacceptable as such an opinion may be to those who believe themselves to be writing under the guidance of inspiration) are essential to the production of consummate poetry. The editor of Mr. Shelley's posthumous poems apologizes for the publication of some fragments in a very incomplete state, by remarking how much "more than every other poet of the present day, every line and word he wrote is instinct with peculiar beauty." Let no man sit down to write with the purpose of making every line and word beautiful and peculiar. The only effect of such an endeavour will be to corrupt his judgment and confound his understanding. In Mr. Shelley's case, besides an endeavour of this kind, there seems to have been an attempt to unrealize every object in nature, presenting them under



forms and combinations in which they are never to be seen through the mere medium of our eye-sight. Mr. Shelley seems to have written under the notion that no phenomena can be perfectly poetical, until they shall have been so decomposed from their natural order and coherency, as to be brought before the reader in the likeness of a phantasma or a vision. A poet is, in his estimation, (if I may venture to infer his principles from his practice,) purely and preëminently a visionary. Much beauty, exceeding splendor of diction and imagery, cannot but be perceived in his poetry, as well as exquisite charms of versification; and a reader of an apprehensive fancy will doubtless be entranced whilst he reads: but when he shall have closed the volume, and considered within himself what it has added to his stock of permanent impressions, of recurring thoughts, of pregnant recollections, he will probably find his stores in this kind no more enriched by having read Mr. Shelley's poems, than by having gazed on so many gorgeously colored clouds in an evening sky. Surpassingly beautiful they were whilst before his eyes; but forasmuch as they had no rele-

vancy to his life, past or future, the impression upon the memory barely survived that upon the senses.

I would by no means wish to be understood as saying that a poet can be too imaginative, provided that his other faculties be exercised in due proportion to his imagination. I would have no man depress his imagination, but I would have him raise his reason to be its equipoise. What I would be understood to oppugn, is the strange opinion which seems to prevail amongst certain of our writers and readers of poetry, that good sense stands in a species of antagonism to poetical genius, instead of being one of its most essential constituents. The maxim that a poet should be "of imagination all compact," is not, I think, to be adopted thus literally. That predominance of the imaginative faculty, or of impassioned temperament, which is incompatible with the attributes of a sound understanding and a just judgment, may make a rhapsodist, a melodist, or a visionary, each of whom may produce what may be admired for the particular talent and beauty belonging to it: but imagination and passion, thus unsupported,

will never make a poet, in the largest and highest sense of the appellation : —

“ For Poetry is Reason’s self sublimed ;  
 ’Tis Reason’s sovereignty, whereunto  
 All properties of sense, all dues of wit,  
 All fancies, images, perceptions, passions,  
 All intellectual ordinance grown up  
 From accident, necessity, or custom,  
 Seen to be good, and after made authentic ;  
 All ordinance aforethought, that from science  
 Doth prescience take, and from experience law ;  
 All lights and institutes of digested knowledge,  
 Gifts and endowments of intelligence  
 From sources living, from the dead bequests, —  
 Subserve and minister.” \*

Mr Shelley and his disciples, however, — the followers (if I may so call them) of the PHANTASTIC SCHOOL, labor to effect a revolution in this order of things. They would transfer the domicile of poetry to regions where reason, far from having any supremacy or rule, is all but unknown, an alien and an outcast ; to seats of anarchy and abstraction, where imagination exercises the shadow of an authority, over a people of phantoms, in a land of dreams.

---

\* MS.

In bringing these very cursory criticisms to a close, I must beg leave to warn the reader against any expectation that he will find my work free either from the faults which I attribute to others, or from faults which may be worse, and more peculiarly my own. The actual works of men will not bear to be measured by their ideal standards in any case; and I may observe, in reference to my own, that my critical views have rather resulted from composition than directed it. If, however, I have been unable to avoid the errors which I condemn, or errors not less censurable, I trust that, on the other hand, I shall not be found to have deprived myself, by any narrowness or perversity of judgment, of the advantage which the study of these writers, exceptionable though they be, may undoubtedly afford to one who, whilst duly taking note of their general defects, shall not have closed his mind to a perception of their particular excellencies. I feel, and have already expressed, a most genuine, and I hope not an inadequate, admiration for the powers which they respectively possess; and wherever it might occur to me that the exercise of those

powers would be appropriate and consistent, I should not fail to benefit by their example to the extent of my capabilities. To say, indeed, that I admire them, is to admit that I owe them much; for admiration is never thrown away upon the mind of him who feels it, except when it is misdirected or blindly indulged. There is perhaps nothing which more enlarges or enriches the mind, than the disposition to lay it genially open to impressions of pleasure from the exercise of every species of talent; nothing by which it is more impoverished than the habit of undue depreciation. What is puerile, pusillanimous, or wicked, it can do us no good to admire; but let us admire all that can be admired without debasing the dispositions or stultifying the understanding.

## INTRODUCTION.

---

In the fourteenth century the Flemish towns were the most opulent and considerable in Europe; and of these, Ghent and Bruges were, in size, wealth, and population, perhaps scarcely inferior even to Venice. They were of right subject to the Earl of Flanders, and, in ordinary times, he exercised by his bailiffs the powers of sovereignty in them: but they had secured various franchises and immunities, which they guarded with jealousy, and which, when need was, they rose in arms to defend. On such occasions they were seldom all joined in a league together; for the trading interests of several of them were in some respects opposite, and some would generally remain subject to the Earl, and at war, therefore, with those which leagued against him.

These towns were not only asunder one from another, but each one was commonly divided by parties within itself. The towns consisted each of various crafts or guilds, as the weavers, the fullers, the clothiers, the mariners, &c., and some of these crafts were occasionally well affected towards *the Earl*, at the same time that others

were disposed to rebellion. But the chief opposition was between the rich inhabitants and the poor. The rich wished for peace and repose; the poor were eager for war, which, in that age, when most men were warlike, was perhaps the best trade that a poor man could follow. When, therefore, any of these towns was in rebellion, there was generally a peace-faction within it, which rose or fell in importance according to the varying circumstances of military success or failure.

In the year 1381, the inhabitants of Bruges made themselves friends with Lois, Earl of Flanders, and under the countenance of his authority, which they purchased, began to cut a channel which would have opened to them a direct communication with the river Lis, the navigation of which was otherwise only accessible to them by passing through Ghent. Ghent was, however, by no means willing to lose her exclusive possession or control of the navigation up the Lis. Like the "*Crowning City*" of more ancient days, "*the harvest of the river was her revenue.*"

"There was at this time in Ghent a burgess called John Lyon, a sage man, cruel, hardy, subtle, and a great enterpriser, and cold and patient enough in all his works." This John Lyon (the Flemish name is Heins, but it is thus Englished) was a dismissed officer of the Earl, and he took the opportunity of the discontent occasioned by the attempt of the people of Bruges supported by the Earl, to revive an old usage of Ghent, by which all the

disaffected were accustomed to form themselves into a corps, distinguished by white hoods, and subordinated to one ruler. Such a corps was now formed, and John Lyon, being chosen their chief, conducted a party of them to attack the pioneers from Bruges who were digging at the Lis. But the pioneers retreated, and desisted without fighting.

The professed object of forming the corps was accomplished therefore; "but notwithstanding that, John Lyon did not abandon his office, but the White-Hoods went daily up and down the town, and John Lyon kept them still in that state, and to some he would say secretly, 'hold you well content; eat and drink, and make merry, and be not concerned at anything you spend; for hereafter such shall pay you as will not now give you one penny.'"

For men thus organized and thus disposed, a fresh cause of quarrel was easily to be found. "In the same week that John Lyon had been thus at Deinse, to have met with the pioneers of Bruges, there came many out of the Franc of Ghent, to complain to them that had then the rule of the law, and said, 'Sirs, at Erclo, near here, which is within the Franchise of Ghent, there is one of our burgesses in the Earl's prison, and we have desired the Earl's bailiff there to deliver him; but he hath plainly answered that he will not deliver him, which is evidently against the privilege of this town of Ghent; and so thereby your privileges will be by degrees broken, which have hitherto been so nobly and so highly praised, and besides that, so well kept and maintained, that none durst



break them, and that the most noble Knight of Flanders considered it an honor to be a burgess of Ghent.' Then they of the Law answered and said, that 'they would write to the bailiff desiring that the burgess may be delivered; for truly his office extendeth not so far as to keep our burgess in the Earl's prison.' And so they wrote to the bailiff for the deliverance of the burgess who was in prison in Erclo. — The bailiff answered, 'What needeth all these words for a mariner?' 'Say,' quoth the bailiff, who was named Roger d'Auterne, 'to them of Ghent, that though he were ten times richer than he is, he shall never go out of prison, unless my lord the Earl command it. I have power to arrest, but I have no power to deliver.'"

They of Ghent were ill content with this answer, and complained loudly to the Earl, who agreed to release the prisoner, and redress their grievances, on condition that the White-Hoods should be disbanded. But John Lyon maintained that it was only by keeping up the White-Hoods that they would ever have any security for their privileges; and, in spite of all the Earl's remonstrances, the White-Hoods increased in number, and were formed into companies, with captains over them. The Earl then sent his bailiff to Ghent with two hundred men, to seize and execute John Lyon and other captains. This brought on an encounter in the market-place, where the bailiff was slain, and the Earl's banner torn in pieces by the White-Hoods.

Such was the beginning of a war, which continued for several years, between the Earl of Flanders and the town of Ghent, and in which the principal towns on the part of the Earl were Bruges, Oudenarde, Dendermonde, Lisle, and Tournay; and those on the part of Ghent were Damme, Ypres, Courtray, Grammont, Poperinguen, and Messines:—A war which in its progress extended to the whole of Flanders, and excited a degree of interest in all the civilized countries of Europe, for which the cause must be sought in the state of European communities at the time. It was believed that entire success on the part of Ghent would bring on a general rising, almost throughout Christendom, of the Commonalty against the Feudal Lords and men of substance. The incorporation of the citizens of Paris, known by the name of “the Army with Mallets,” was, according to a contemporary historian, “all by the example of them of Ghent.” Nicholas le Flamand deterred them from pulling down the Louvre, by urging the expediency of waiting to see what success might attend the Flemish insurgents. At Rheims, Chalons on the Marne, at Orleans, Beauvoisin, the like designs were entertained. “The rebellion of the Jacquerie,” says the well-known chronicler of the period, “was never so terrible as this was likely to have been.” Brabant, Burgundy, and the lower part of Germany, were in a dangerous condition; and in England Wat Tyler’s rebellion was contemporaneous, and not unconnected with what was going on in Flanders.

I have related, by way of introduction, the origin of the war, — not that the incidents in which it originated are immediately connected with those of my play, which opens at a later period, after the death of John Lyon ; but because I have wished (as much as in so small a compass may be) to give those of my readers who may require it, a notion of the temper of mind which prevailed in Flanders towards the end of the fourteenth century.

**PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE.**

**PART I.**

“ No arts, no letters, no society,—and which is worst of all, continu  
fear and danger of violent death, and the life of Man solitary, poor, nast  
brutish, and short.”

LEVIATHAN, Part I. c. 18.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

---

### MEN OF GHENT.

PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE  
PETER VAN DEN BOSCH  
SIR GUY, LORD OF OCCO  
PETER VAN NUITRE  
FRANS ACKERMAN

} *Leaders of the  
White-Hoods.*

VAN AESWYN, *Squire to Sir Guy of Occo.*

HENRY VAN DRONGELEN, *Page to Van Artevelde.*

FATHER JOHN OF HEDA, *a Monk, formerly preceptor  
to Van Artevelde.*

VAN RYK }  
VAN MUCK } *Deans of two of the Crafts.*

UKENHEIM, *a Citizen.*

SIR SIMON BETTE  
SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT  
MYK STEENSEL

} *Wealthy Citizens.*

### MEN OF BRUGES.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS,

SIR WALTER D'ARLON,

GILBERT MATTHEW,

SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT, AND OTHERS.

### WOMEN.

ADRIANA VAN MERESTYN.

CLARA VAN ARTEVELDE, *Sister of Philip Van Artevelde.*

---

The SCENE is laid sometimes at GHENT, sometimes at BRUGES, or in its neighbourhood.



# PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE.

---

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.

A STREET IN THE SUBURBS OF GHENT.

*The* LORD OF OCCO, *meeting* SIR SIMON BETTE *and*  
SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

OCCO.

Sir Guisebert Grutt, and, by my faith, I think  
Sir Simon Bette too. Pray you pardon me ;  
I thought that you were sped upon your mission  
To treat for peace at Bruges.

SIR SIMON BETTE.

Sir, in good time.

We'd have a word with you before we go.  
You are a noble born, my Lord of Occo ;  
And let me tell you, many marvel much  
To find a gentleman of so great worth  
A flatterer of the Commons.



SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

Yea, my lord,

It looks not well when nobles fall away  
 One from another. That the small-crafts here  
 Should lift their hands against their natural lord,  
 Is but the plague and sorrow of the time,  
 Which we, that are of credit, must abide :  
 But ne'er till now a gentleman of name  
 Was found amongst their leaders.

occo.

Oh, dear Sirs,

I could remind you how your sometime selves  
 Bore less goodwill towards the Earl's affairs  
 Than spurs your errand now ; and if to you  
 Pardon be promised, I would fain be told  
 Why not to me as well.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

Truly, why not ?

To whoso merits 't will freely fall ;  
 So give us leave to make a good report  
 Of how you stand affected. 'T were your wisdom.

occo.

Kind Sirs, I thank you ; you shall say, so please you,  
 That I am not of them that evermore  
 Cry out for war, and having not a hope  
 Of the Earl's mercy, act as desperate men ;  
 For were I sure the multitude met pity  
 It would not then behove me to stand out  
 For my particular ransom, — though, to say truth,  
 The Earl should do himself but little service  
 Were he to deal too hardly with us all.

SIR SIMON BETTE.

'Tis fairly spoken, Sir. When we come back,  
 Bringing conditions with us as we trust,  
 We'll look for aid from you amongst the Commons.  
 For truly there are here a sort of crafts *men*  
 So factious still for war, and obstinate, *men*  
 That we shall be endangered. Suing for peace  
 Is ever treason to the White-Hoods. Well,  
 We'll look for your support.

occo.

God speed you, Sirs.

To fair conditions you shall find me friendly.

[*Exeunt* SIR SIMON BETTE, and SIR  
 GUISEBERT GRUTT. VAN AESWYN  
*comes forward.*]

VAN AESWYN.

My lord, were those that parted from you here  
 The worshipful negotiators?

occo.

Aye!

Would they had passed the windmills — how they  
 crawl! —

And met no babbling burghers on their way.

VAN AESWYN.

What! you have made an overture?

occo.

Not so:

I've flung my line, and yonder pair of hooks

Are aptly baited to ensure me one;

*But compromised I am not, — no, nor will be,*

Till it be seen if yet my suit may thrive  
 With yon fair frozen dew-drop, all that 's left  
 To represent Van Merestyn's hot blood.

VAN AESWYN.

'T is said she is but backwardly inclined  
 To any of her swains.

occo.

Such wealth as hers  
 Makes a maid whimsical and hard to please.  
 She that can have her will, be what it may,  
 Is much to seek to settle what it shall be.  
 The damsel must be tried ; for if she yield,  
 The charier must I be, whilst times permit,  
 Of the good town's goodwill. Her lands lie all  
 Within the Franc of Ghent. Send Berckel to her,  
 And bid him say I wait upon her leisure.

[*Exeu*

## SCENE II.

THE HOUSE VAN MERESTYN.

ADRIANA VAN MERESTYN, *and* CLARA VAN  
 ARTEVELDE.

CLARA.

I do not bid thee take him or refuse him ;  
*I only say, think twice.*

ADRIANA.

But once to think  
Is once too much upon a theme like this,  
When the heart speaks.

CLARA.

Truly, but yours says 'yes.'

ADRIANA.

Most absolutely, 'no.'

CLARA.

If so to him,  
Be sure that inwardly it proffers 'yes'  
To some one else.

ADRIANA.

I'd take my heart to task,  
If ever it should be so wanton-bold.

CLARA.

You'd frown upon it grimly, and would say  
'Speak when you are spoken to.' 'T is easy said.  
I can remember, when a child, my nurse  
Would whip me for not sleeping; but alas!  
I never slept the more for being whipped.  
Well; answer what you will; no, yes — yes, no;  
Either or both; I would the chance were mine;  
I say no more; I would it were my lot  
To have a lover.

ADRIANA.

Yours? why there's Sir Walter.

CLARA.

*Sir Walter? very good; but he's at Bruges.  
I want one here.*

ADRIANA.

On days of truce he comes.

CLARA.

I want one every day. Besides the war  
 Will never slacken now ; a truce to truces.  
 And though on moonless, cloud-encompassed nights,  
 He will, in his discretion, truce or none,  
 Hazard a trip, yet should he be discovered,  
 Mild Van den Bosch would pat him on the head,  
 And then he 'd come no more.

ADRIANA.

I pity him,  
 To have in chase so wild a heart as thine.

CLARA.

I cannot but believe I have two hearts.  
 Here is a little one upon the left,  
 And that I gave to D'Arlon ; then there's . . . . . no,  
 What is it that lies here ?

ADRIANA.

'T is hollowness.

CLARA.

Just Heaven ! But we are wasting time ; think well  
 What you should say ; for if it must be ' no '  
 In substance, you shall hardly find that form  
 Which shall convey it pleasantly.

ADRIANA.

In truth,  
 To mould denial to a pleasing shape  
 In all things, and most specially in love,

Is a hard task ; alas ! I have not wit  
 From such a sharp and waspish word as ' no '  
 To pluck the sting. What think you I should say ?

CLARA.

A colorable thing or two ; as thus :  
 My lord, we women swim not with our hearts,  
 Nor yet our judgments, but the world's opinions ;  
 And though I prize you dearly in my soul,  
 And think you of all excellence compounded,  
 Yet 't is a serious and unhappy thing  
 To hear you spoken of : for men protest  
 That you are cruel, cowardly, and false,  
 Boastful, malicious ; that your wit is craft,  
 Your love is lust, devotion misbelief,  
 Your merriment unseemly, sadness sour ;  
 Your joys of others' miseries engendered,  
 Your misery of their joys ; your business wicked,  
 Your leisure lewd, your kindness cold, hate hot ;  
 Your riches (which are plunder) spent in pride,  
 Your favor got by fawning, your ill-will  
 Bestowed on worth, your injuries on your betters ;  
 That envy's entrails are your daily food ;  
 That scorn (which masks your fear) of what is wise,  
 Noble, and honest, is your breath of life,  
 Detraction your fifth element.

ADRIANA.

No more ?

Am I to use no courtesies but these ?

CLARA.

Oh mercy, *yes!* To cut him off so short  
 Should give him dudgeon : stop, where was I ? ah ! —

This for your mind's repute. Then for your person,  
(Which for my own particular I love)

'T is said that you are strangely ill to look at ;

That your blank eyes are borrowed of a fish,

Your eyebrows bald, your stony forehead low,

Your hair the color of a dirty blanket ;

And for your bleak complexion they aver

It comes of coldness of your blood ; your nose,

They say, is built on spandrils, and upturned

With an unmannerly and flaunting scoff

At neighbour mouth, only because his air

Is homely and uncouth, and that he's grown,

Through a continual bandying of big words,

More sizable than comely ; for your beard

They vow 't is like your cook, that fattened is

With sundry sops that should have reached your  
stomach :

All which imaginations, good my lord,

Grossly as they may counterfeit defect

Where merit most abounds, are yet so clenched

With cramps and dovetails in the minds of men,

That in despite of that so high esteem

In which I hold you, and against my will,

I am constrained to say your Lordship's scullion .

Should sooner be my husband than yourself.

ADRIANA.

Thanks for your counsel ; an auspicious scheme

Is this of yours for easing off his pride,

And scattering a veil of spangled words

Upon the faults that move me to reject him.

But look ! Is this — no, 't is your brother's page.

CLARA.

All hail to him! he is my daily sport.  
Of all things under heaven that make me merry,  
It makes me merriest to see a boy  
That wants to be a man.

ADRIANA.

His want fulfilled,  
He will not be the worse; 't is well for them  
That have no faults but what they needs must leave.

*Enter the PAGE.*

CLARA.

How now, Sir Henry! whither away, brave knight?

PAGE.

I'm coming but to pay my duty here;  
The Lady Adriana lets me come.

CLARA.

I wish thy master knew it.

PAGE.

So he does;  
He tells me to come too.

CLARA.

Alas, poor man!  
Hath he no eyes?

PAGE.

What mean you, Mistress Clara?

CLARA.

Why, when our pages steal away our loves,



Tell gardeners to keep blackbirds. Look you here —  
 Look on this drooping melancholy maid ;  
 What hast thou done ?

PAGE.

Who, I ? it was not I.

CLARA.

Who was it then ? Well — ‘ kissing goes by favor ’ —  
 So saith the proverb ; truly, more ’s the pity !  
 Yet I commend your prudence, Adriana,  
 For favoring this pure and pretty child,  
 In place of that so rude and graceless monster  
 That takes the name of man. I ’ll learn from you ;  
 And if, when I have kissed my pug and parrot,  
 I have the matter of a mouthful left,  
 For fear of waste that ’s worse I ’ll spend them here.

PAGE.

I would advise you to be more discreet.

CLARA.

Soho ! and wherefore ? Oh ! so old you are !  
 Full fifteen summers older than your beard,  
 And that was born last week — before its time.  
 I told you, Adriana, did I not,  
 Of the untimely birth ? It chanced o’ Wednesday,  
 By reason of a fright he gave his chin,  
 Making its innocent down to stand on end  
 With brandishing of a most superfluous razor.

ADRIANA.

You told me no such tale ; and if you had,  
*I should not have believed you ; for your tongue*  
*Was ever nimbler in the track of sport,*

Than fits for hunting in a leash with truth.  
Heed her not, Henry, she is full of slanders.

CLARA.

Truth is an honest mastiff, thorough-bred ;  
I am a mongrel, coming of a cross  
'Twixt cur and grey-hound ; so I snack and run.  
But is it slander to impute to folk  
More youthhead than they have ? If so it be,  
How many a dame, that if to live and learn  
Were of one stock and bearing, should know better,  
Slanders herself. I said but he was young.

PAGE.

I am almost as old as you.

CLARA.

I grant thee ;  
But we are women when boys are but boys.  
God gives us grace to ripen and grow wise  
Some two years earlier. I thank heaven for it ;  
We grow upon the sunny side o' the wall.

PAGE.

Methinks your wisdom grows o' the windy side,  
And bears but little fruit.

CLARA.

What ! saucy grown !  
It bears more fruit than thou hast wit to steal,  
Or stomach to digest. Were I thy tutor,  
To teach thee wisdom, and beheld such store  
Of goodly fruitage, I should say to thee,  
'*Rob me this orchard.*' Then wouldst thou reply,  
'*Five feet three inches stand I in my shoes,*

And yet I cannot reach to pluck these plums,  
So loftily they flourish!' Look, look, look!  
Here comes the knight upon an ambling nag.  
Now, Adriana!

ADRIANA.

I am sore perplexed.

What shall I say?

CLARA.

My counsel you have heard,  
And partly slighted, wherefore seek to better;  
Take we direction from our full-grown friend.  
Sir Henry, one will presently be here  
Who 't is suspected from his late demeanor,  
Will ask our Adriana's hand in marriage.  
What shall she answer?

PAGE.

She shall answer 'no.'

CLARA.

Suppose her wishful so to say, what cause  
Should she assign?

PAGE.

Her wish is cause enough.

CLARA.

'T is cause enough to pages when they 're kissed,  
But knights that be rejected should be soothed  
With courteous phrase.

PAGE.

Then let her say — 'My lord,

You are the flower of Flemish chivalry,  
But I have vowed to live and die a maid.'

CLARA.

A goodly vow, God give her grace to make it,  
An' it be not too troublesome to keep.  
But he's no more the flower of Flemish knights,  
Than thou the pearl of pages. Adriana,  
Bethink you well what answer you shall make,  
Lest he surprise you and you tell the truth.

ADRIANA.

Prithee, what truth? There's nothing to be hidden.

CLARA.

There's nothing can from Clara. But enough;  
I'll touch that topic after; the knight comes.

*Enter* THE LORD OF OCCO.

OCCO.

Fairest of ladies! an unworthy knight  
Does homage to your beauty.

ADRIANA.

Good my lord,  
I am beholden to your courtesy,  
That gives to this poor semblance such a name.  
But here is one by whose associate charms  
And kindly converse I am brightened ever.  
Let me make known to you, my Lord of Occo,  
A daughter of the House of Artevelde.

OCCO.

Fair damsel, I am happy in the fortune  
Which *shines upon me* from two spheres at once.

CLARA.

Fair Sir, I thank you for your courtesy.  
 No lady lives in Ghent with ears to hear,  
 Who has not heard recounted night and day  
 The exploits of Lord Occo.

occo.

On my soul,  
 I blush to hear it said ; though true it is,  
 I have performed what little in me lay  
 To bring renown to Flemish chivalry.  
 I give to God the glory ; and, next him,  
 'T is due to her whose charms would kindle valor  
 In the most coldest heart of Christendom.  
 Inspired by her, I could not choose but conquer.

CLARA.

Whoe'er inspired your valor, your exploits  
 Must give that lady high preëminence.  
 Three hundred men at arms, I think it was,  
 You freely fell upon with sword in hand,  
 After the storming of the Fort at Sas,  
 And not a soul survived.

occo.

Your pardon, lady ;  
 Some other trifle 's in your thoughts ; at Sas  
 There is no fort, and they who perished there  
 Were but three hundred peasants, who were burned  
 By firing of a barn to which they 'd fled.

CLARA.

*Ah, was it so ?* At Zeveren then surely —

OCCO.

What happened there too was of no account.

CLARA.

Oh, pardon me ; the modesty which still  
Accompanies true valor casts in shade  
Your noble actions. I beseech you tell  
What came to pass at Zeveren.

OCCO.

The town  
Was taken by surprise.

CLARA.

Aye true, and then  
The garrison, that made themselves so strong  
Within the convent's walls—

OCCO.

At Zeveren  
There was no garrison.

CLARA.

You say not so ?  
How false is Fame ! I 'm certain I was told  
Of a great slaughter in the convent there.

OCCO.

True ; a proportion of the sisterhood  
At Zeveren were unfortunate ; but most  
Suffered no more than loss of what in truth  
Was but the shadow of a fair possession.  
There 's many an inconvenient concealment,  
And many an open scandal has been spared,  
Upon the plea of that which happened then.

Trust me, the sisters thanked us in their hearts  
For saving of their honors.

ADRIANA.

They that died  
May have been thankful: let us hope they were.

CLARA.

At Lichtenvelde, my lord, you triumphed too,  
If I mistake not.

occo.

Lady, by your leave,  
We'll treat of other things. Haply you know not  
The usages of war, and scarce approve  
Proceedings which its hard necessities  
Will oft-times force upon us warriors.  
A softer theme were meeter, and there's one  
On which I burn to speak.

CLARA.

Alack, alack!  
Then I am gone; soft speeches please mine ear,  
As do soft pillows — when I fain would sleep.  
But what's the time of day? Come hither, Henry,  
We walk by high examples in this world;  
Let's to the poultry-yard and win our spurs.  
Give you good day, my lord.

[*Exeunt CLARA and PAU*

occo.

A merry lady  
Your friend appears; but now that she is gone  
*I must entreat your hearing for a word  
Of graver import — grave, if aught imports*

The life or death of this poor heart of mine.  
 A burning fiery furnace is this heart,  
 Wherein thine image only, like a charm,  
 For ever, evermore remains consuming,  
 And ever unconsumed! That wastes my life  
 Which with a word from thee would make earth heaven,  
 And I must soon be nothing or a god!  
 There's an unutterable want and void,  
 A gulf, a craving, and a sucking in,  
 As when a mighty ship goes down at sea.  
 I roam about with hunger-bitten heart,  
 A famine in my bosom — a dry heat,  
 A desperate thirst, and I must glut it now,  
 Or like a dog by summer solstice parched  
 I shall go mad.

ADRIANA.

Oh no, my lord; or you deceive yourself,  
 Or else you flatter me. Yes, I know well  
 How much you all are practised in love lore,  
 And how knights' tongues are ready with such phrase,  
 For any simple maid they wish to please.

occo.

On my salvation, what I speak I feel.  
 Mine is no rhapsody of ready words.  
 Put this white hand upon this barred door,  
 At which my heart is knocking. Loud and fast  
 It knocks — shut up within a house on fire.  
 'Then tell me, doth not this avouch the truth  
 Of the great love I swear?

ADRIANA.

Oh! pardon me,



I will not prove it further ; I'll but say  
 It irks me that I cannot be so grateful  
 As you may think I ought.

occo.

Nay, lady, nay :  
 Deem that I've been tormented long enough,  
 And let this coyness have a timely end.

ADRIANA.

I am not coy, my lord ; and since at last  
 You've spoken out, my speech shall be as free.  
 I thank you for your kindness and good-will,  
 But cannot be your wife.

occo.

Ah ! say not so,  
 Or I shall wish that you'd been coy for ever:  
 I'll not believe it. Ah ! 't were death to think it !

ADRIANA.

My lord, there's many a worthier than I  
 Who would console you, if you needed solace ;  
 But for my love, I should but do you wrong  
 If I should lead you further on the quest.

occo.

It cannot be your nature is unloving ;  
 You will not tell me that ?

ADRIANA.

I've told you all  
 Which it can profit you to know.

occo.

Ah ! now

I see it clearly ; there 's some smooth-tongued knave  
Has been before me, — yea, some wheedling minion,  
With song and dance, and lute, and lily hands,  
Has wriggled into favor, I the while  
Fighting hard battles to my neck in blood.  
Tell me in honesty if this be sooth ;  
If it be not, in charity say no.

ADRIANA.

In charity I never will speak more  
With you, Sir Guy of Occo.  
Nor till I see a sign of gentle blood,  
Or knightly courtesy in one so bold,  
Will I again hold converse, or with him,  
Or any that abets him. This to me !

[Exit.

occo.

Thanks, gentle lady ! Thanks, kind, loving soul !  
I am instructed ; there came out the truth ;  
Those flashing eyes could hold it in no longer.  
They are as plain to read as are the stars  
To him who knows their signs. Would that I knew  
The name of him who thrusts himself between us,  
And what star rules him in the house of life !  
Who rides this way and waves that long salute ?  
Philip Van Artevelde, as I 'm a knight !  
Then no more need I knowledge of the stars.

[Exit.

## SCENE III.

## THE STADT-HOUSE.

*Enter MYK STEENSEL, followed by several BURGHER*

STEENSEL.

And who is Van den Bosch, resolve me that :  
I say, Sirs, who is he to lay on taxes ?

FIRST BURGHER.

Or Ackerman, or Launoy, who are they ?

STEENSEL.

I say, Sirs, if our goods be not our own,  
Better our natural liege lord should have them  
Than thus to render them to John or Peter.

SECOND BURGHER.

Why look you, Sirs, our case stands simply here.  
The Earl of Flanders is a valiant lord,  
And was a gracious master, till the Devil,  
Who never sleeps, awakened them of Bruges  
To dig about the Lis to turn the water.  
But what, Sirs, — we have fought enough for that.

STEENSEL..

Why, still the more we fight the more we lose,  
For every battle that our White-Hoods win  
But gives a warrant to this Van den Bosch  
To spoil us of our substance. ——— Welcome, Sirs.

*Enter two DEANS of the CRAFTS.*

FIRST DEAN.

Friends, have ye heard the news?

STEENSEL.

I know not, Sir;

If the news be, we owe the White-Hoods pay  
For giving us a hosier for our liege, —  
'Tis old, Sir, old.

SECOND DEAN.

No, this is what you 'll owe them;

A ready market for your rats and mice.  
Corn is already risen cent per cent,  
Though many question if the news be true.  
Our John of Launoy's slain, with all his men,  
And the Earl's troops possess the Quatre-Metiers.

STEENSEL.

There's a fair end to our supplies from Brabant.  
But how came this to pass?

SECOND DEAN.

'T was briefly thus:

Beside Nivelles the Earl and Launoy met.  
Six thousand voices shouted with the last  
'Ghent the good Town! Ghent and the Chaperons  
Blancs!'

But from that force thrice-told there came the cry  
Of 'Flanders, with the Lion of the Bastard!'  
So then the battle joined, and they of Ghent  
Gave back and opened after three hours' fight;  
And hardly flying had they gained Nivelles,  
When the Earl's vanguard came upon their rear

Ere they could close the gate, and entered with them.  
 Then all were slain save Launoy and his guard,  
 Who, barricaded in the minster tower,  
 Made desperate resistance, whereupon  
 The Earl waxed wrothful and bade fire the church.

## FIRST BURGHER.

Say'st thou? Oh sacrilege accursed! Was't done?

## SECOND DEAN.

'T was done, — and presently was heard a yell,  
 And after that the rushing of the flames!  
 Then Launoy from the steeple cried aloud  
 'A ransom!' and held up his coat to sight  
 With florins filled, but they without but laughed  
 And mocked him, saying, 'Come amongst us, John,  
 And we will give thee welcome; — make a leap —  
 Come out at window, John.' — With that the flames  
 Rose up and reached him, and he drew his sword,  
 Cast his rich coat behind him in the fire,  
 And shouting 'Ghent, ye slaves!' leapt freely forth,  
 When they below received him on their spears.  
 And so died John of Launoy.

## FIRST BURGHER.

A brave end.

'T is certain we must now make peace betimes,  
 The city will be starved else. — Will be, said I?  
 Starvation is upon us: want and woe  
 Stand round about and stare us in the face;  
 And what will be the end?

## STEENSEL.

Believe me, Sirs,

ing as Van den Bosch bears rule in Ghent  
 I'll not have peace, for well wots he no terms  
 spare his life will pacify the Earl.  
 if we make no peace but with the will  
 of them whose heads must answer it, woe to us!  
 we must fight for ever; Sirs, I say,  
 must put down this Van den Bosch, and up  
 men that with the Earl stand fair and free,  
 shall take counsel for the city's weal.

## BURGHERS.

we must.

## STEENSEL.

Then, friends, stand fast by me,  
 as we're all agreed to give no denier  
 is five hundred marks, I will speak out,  
 let him know our minds.

VAN DEN BOSCH *and* THE LORD OF OCCO, *with a*  
*retinue of WHITE-HOODS.*

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

morrow, worthy friends, good morrow, all!  
 a sweet sight to look on, in these times,  
 are of true and trusty friends to Ghent  
 rash and hearty, and so well provided.  
 Sirs, you know not, you, who lies afield  
 in nights are cold, with frogs for bed-fellows;  
 know not, you, who fights and sheds his blood,  
 fasts, and fills his belly with the east wind!  
 souls and virtuous citizens they are!  
*they that keep the franchises of Ghent.*



May not cut out thy tongue and slit thy nose  
For uttering of such treasons — how, indeed ?

STEENSEL.

Thou think'st by this to hound thy pack upon me ;  
But know, thy reign is o'er, and I defy thee.  
Thy brother Launoy with his men at arms  
Will never answer to thy bidding more ;  
And if thou dare do violence to me,  
Thou shalt be fain to take as long a leap  
As his was at Nivelles.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Oh, ho ! my masters !

'T is this then that emboldens you, this tale  
Brought by a lying slave who ran away  
Before the fight began, and calls it lost,  
That so his cowardice should stand excused ;  
For which his false report and foul desertion  
I have already had him gibbeted.  
Bring not yourselves, I pray ye, for your honors,  
With the like nimbleness to a grave i' the air.  
I say, Sirs, bring me these five hundred marks,  
And that ere to-morrow's sun go down —  
Five hundred marks — I'll bate you not a scute ;  
Ye slothful, hide-blown, gormandizing niggards !  
What ! all must starve but you, that lie a-bed,  
And lack a day of fast to purge your grossness.  
What, know ye who I am ? Are ye awake ?  
Or sleeping off the wine of yesternight,  
And deeming this some tustle with your wives  
For pulling of a *blanket here or there*.  
*Five hundred marks — begone, and bring the money.*



## STEENSEL.

Begone we will. Let's to our homes, my friends.  
 And what we'll bring thee, thou shalt know betimes,  
 Nor wait the setting of to-morrow's sun.  
 Not gold, Sir, no, nor silver, be thou sure,  
 But what shall best befit a brave man's hand.

[*Exeunt STEENSEL and the BURGHERS ; manen  
 VAN DEN BOSCH and Occo.*

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

Thou seest, Sir, how the knaves take heart and rail  
 On this mishap.

## occo.

I saw both that and more, —  
 Our White-Hoods looked like very renegades,  
 As though they knew not which to fear the most,  
 Thy rod and gallows-tree, or the Earl's bailiff.  
 Trust me, we're falling fast to pieces, Peter.

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

My Lord of Occo, thou hast seen aright.  
 But what can I? Our chiefs drop, one by one;  
 Launoy, too truly, perished at Nivelles;  
 Le Clerc lies leaning up against a hedge  
 (Till some one dare go bury him), at Chem;  
 Thy cousin fell with Launoy. Now, Van Harsells  
 And Ackerman are good for men at arms,  
 But want the wit to govern a great town.  
 And I am good at arms, and want not wit,  
 But then I'm sore suspected of the rich,  
 By reason of my rudeness, and the fruit  
 Which that same gallows-tree of mine hath borne;

And to say truth, although my wit be good,  
 It hath a fitter range without the gates,  
 In ordering an enterprise, than here.  
 The city leans to peace for lack of leading,  
 And we must put a head upon its shoulders.

occo.

Hast thou bethought thee of a man that's wise,  
 And fit to bear this rule ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Why, there be such,  
 Though one that's wise would scarce be wise to take it.

occo.

There is no game so desperate which wise men  
 Will not take freely up for love of power ;  
 Or love of fame, or merely love of play.  
 These men are wise, and then reputed wise,  
 And so their great repute of wisdom grows,  
 Till for great wisdom a great price is bid,  
 And then their wisdom do they part withal :  
 Such men must still be tempted with high stakes, —  
 Philip Van Artevelde is such a man.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

That is well thought of. Let us try him then.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE IV.

THE HOUSE VAN MERESTYN.

ADRIANA, VAN MERESTYN, *and* CLARA VAN  
ARTEVELDE.

CLARA.

So you 've dismissed the Lord of Occo.

ADRIANA.

Yes.

CLARA.

How many suitors have you discharged this morning?

ADRIANA.

How many?

CLARA.

Yes. Was not my brother Philip here?

ADRIANA.

He saw me through the lattice, and stayed his horse  
an instant under the window.

CLARA.

Was that all?

ADRIANA.

Yes — no — yes — I suppose so.

CLARA.

Oh! that maids would learn to speak the truth, or  
*else to lie becomingly!*

ADRIANA.

Do *I* not lie becomingly? — Well, 't is want of use  
that ruins me. What should I say?

CLARA.

What say! Had my sworn friend so questioned me,  
And I been minded, maugre our sworn friendship,  
To coil my thoughts up in my secret self,  
I with a brave and careless hardihood  
Had graced the disavowal of my love.

ADRIANA.

But did I say I loved him not? Oh, God!  
If I said that, I say, since truth was truth,  
There never was a falsehood half so false.  
I say I love him, and I say beside,  
That but to say I love him is as nothing;  
'T is but a tithe and scantling of the truth!  
And oh! how much I love him, what can tell?  
Not words, not tears — heaven only knows how much;  
And every evening when I say my prayers,  
I pray to be forgiven for the sin  
Of loving aught on earth with such a love.

CLARA.

Well, God forgive you! for you answer now  
Like a true maid and honest, though a sinning.  
But tell me, if that 's mentioned in your prayers,  
For how much love has *he* to be forgiven?

ADRIANA.

Alas! I know not.

CLARA.

*Nay, but you can guess*

ADRIANA.

Oh ! I have guessed a thousand times too oft.  
 And sometimes I am hopeful as the spring,  
 And up my fluttering heart is borne aloft  
 As high and gladsome as the lark at sunrise ;  
 And then, as though the fowler's arrow pierced it,  
 It comes plump down with such a dead, dead fall.

CLARA.

And all the while is he, I nothing doubt,  
 As wayward and as love-sick as yourself.

ADRIANA.

He love-sick ! No — it may be that he loves me ;  
 But if he does, it is with no love-sickness.  
 His nerves are made of other cord than mine ;  
 He saunters undisturbed along the Lis,  
 For ever angling as he used to do.  
 And when he told me he must come to-night,  
 And that he then would lay a burden down  
 Which he had borne in silence all-too-long,  
 His voice was strong and steady, calm and clear,  
 So that I doubted if it could be love  
 'That then was in his thoughts.

CLARA.

Oh ! much the doubt !  
 But this was what I knew had come to pass,  
 When, answering with your vacant no and yes,  
 You fed upon your thoughts and marked me not.

ADRIANA.

*But think you that it really must be love  
 He comes to speak of?*

CLARA.

Why, 't is either that,  
Or else to tell you of what fish he caught.

ADRIANA.

Oh, do not tease me ; for my heart is faint  
With over-fulness of its expectations.

CLARA.

Oh! if your love 's so lamentable sick,  
Nurse it yourself; I 'll go.

ADRIANA.

With all my heart.  
You 're too light-headed for my company.

CLARA.

Is it with all your heart? then I 'll not go ;  
Or else I 'll take you with me. Come along ;  
Your bower lacks tendance ; it is strewn with leaves ;  
The autumn winds have broken in, alas !  
And many a flower is hanging down its head  
Since the rude kissing of those wild intruders.  
Come, come with me ; the dew is on the grass,  
And at this merry pace, an inch an hour,  
We 'll chase the snails that pass us by like lightning.

[ *Exeunt.* ]

## SCENE V.

THE HOUSE VAN ARTEVELDE.

PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE, *and* FATHER JOHN OF  
HEDA.

VAN ARTEVELDE.

I never looked that he should live so long.  
He was a man of that unsleeping spirit,  
He seemed to live by miracle: his food  
Was glory, which was poison to his mind,  
And peril to his body. He was one  
Of many thousand such that die betimes,  
Whose story is a fragment, known to few.  
Then comes the man who has the luck to live,  
And he's a prodigy. Compute the chances,  
And deem there's ne'er a one in dangerous times  
Who wins the race of glory, but than him  
A thousand men more gloriously endowed  
Have fallen upon the course; a thousand others  
Have had their fortunes foundered by a chance,  
Whilst lighter barks pushed past them; to whom add  
A smaller tally, of the singular few,  
Who, gifted with predominating powers,  
Bear yet a temperate will and keep the peace.  
The world knows nothing of its greatest men.

FATHER JOHN.

*Had Launoy lived he might have passed for great,  
But not by conquests in the Franc of Bruges.*

The sphere, the scale of circumstance, is all  
 Which makes the wonder of the many. Still  
 An ardent soul was Launoy's, and his deeds  
 Were such as dazzled many a Flemish dame.  
 There 'll some bright eyes in Ghent be dimmed for him.

## VAN ARTEVELDE.

They will be dim and then be bright again.  
 All is in busy, stirring, stormy motion,  
 And many a cloud drifts by, and none sojourns.  
 Lightly is life laid down amongst us now,  
 And lightly is death mourned: a dusk star blinks  
 As fleets the rack, but look again, and lo!  
 In a wide solitude of wintry sky  
 Twinkles the re-illuminated star,  
 And all is out of sight that smirched the ray.  
 We have not time to mourn.

## FATHER JOHN.

The worse for us!  
 He that lacks time to mourn, lacks time to mend.  
 Eternity mourns that. 'T is an ill cure  
 For life's worst ills, to have no time to feel them.  
 Where sorrow's held intrusive and turned out,  
 There wisdom will not enter, nor true power,  
 Nor aught that dignifies humanity.  
 Yet such the barrenness of busy life!  
 From shelf to shelf Ambition clambers up,  
 To reach the nakedest pinnacle of all,  
 Whilst Magnanimity, absolved from toil,  
 Reposes self-included at the base.  
 But this thou *knowest*.



ARTEVELDE.

Else had I little learned  
From my much learned preceptor.

*Enter* THE PAGE.

What, Sir Page!

Hast thou been idling in the market-place ?  
Canst tell whose chattels have been sold to-day  
For payment of the White-Hoods ?

PAGE.

No, my lord,  
I've been at dame Van Merestyn's.

ARTEVELDE.

Ha, there !

Well, and what said the dame ?

PAGE.

She was abroad ;  
I saw the lady Adriana.

ARTEVELDE.

Her !

Well, and what said the damsel ?

PAGE.

Sir, not much ;  
For mistress Clara was her visiter,  
And she said every thing ; she said it all.

ARTEVELDE.

What was the topic ?

PAGE.

After I came in  
The talk was all of chivalry and love.  
And presently arrived the Lord of Occo.

ARTEVELDE.

And what was talked of then ?

PAGE.

Oh ! still the same.  
The ladies praised him mightily for deeds,  
Whose fame, they said, effulgent far and wide,  
Eclipsed Sir Roland and Sir Oliver.

ARTEVELDE.

Now Father, mark you that ; hearts soft as wax  
These damsels would be thought to bear about,  
Yet ever is the bloodiest knight the best !

FATHER JOHN.

It is most true. Full many a dame I've known  
Who'd faint and sicken at the sight of blood,  
And shriek and wring her hands, and rend her hair,  
To see her lord brought wounded to the door ;  
And many a one I've known to pine with dread  
Of such mishap or worse, — lie down in fear,  
The night-mare sole sad partner of her bed,  
Rise up in horror to recount bad dreams,  
And seek to witches to interpret them, —  
This oft I've known, but never knew I one  
Who'd be content her lord should live at home  
In love, and christian charity and peace.

## ARTEVELDE.

And wherefore so? Because the women's heaven  
Is vanity, and that is over all.

What's firiest still finds favor in their eyes;

What's noisiest keeps the entrance of their ears.

The noise and blaze of arms enchants them most:

Wit, too, and wisdom, that's admired of all,

They can admire, — the glory, not the thing.

A light beneath a bushel never yet

Dazzled the vision feminine. For me,

Nor noise, nor blaze attend my peaceful path;

Nor, were it otherwise, should I desire

That noise and blaze of mine won any heart.

Wherefore it is that I would fain possess,

If any, that which David wept, — a love

Passing the love of women.

## FATHER JOHN.

Deem you not

There may be one who so transcends her sex

In loving, as to match the son of Saul?

## ARTEVELDE.

It may be I have deemed or dreamed of such.

But what know I? We figure to ourselves

The thing we like, and then we build it up

As chance will have it, on the rock or sand:

For thought is tired of wandering o'er the world,

And home-bound fancy runs her bark ashore.

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

ATTENDANT.

Sir, here is master Van den Bosch below  
Desires to speak with you.

ARTEVELDE.

To speak with me!  
I marvel on what errand Van den Bosch  
Can seek Van Artevelde. Say, I attend him.  
Tell me if I shall find you at your cell  
After the hour of complines?

FATHER JOHN.

Then and there  
I shall be found, my son, and thou be welcome.

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE VI.

THE SAME.

VAN ARTEVELDE *and* VAN DEN BOSCH.

ARTEVELDE.

This is a mighty matter, Van den Bosch,  
And much to be revolved ere it be answered.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

The people shall elect thee with one voice.  
I will ensure the White-Hoods, and the rest

Will eagerly accept thy nomination,  
 So to be rid of some that they like less.  
 Thy name is honored both of rich and poor,  
 For all are mindful of the glorious rule  
 Thy father bore, when Flanders, prosperous then,  
 From end to end obeyed him as one town.

## ARTEVELDE.

They may remember it — and, Van den Bosch,  
 May I not too bethink me of the end  
 To which this people brought my noble father?  
 They gorged the fruits of his good husbandry,  
 Till drunk with long prosperity, and blind  
 With too much fatness, they tore up the root  
 From which their common weal had sprung and flour  
 ished.

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

Nay, master Philip, let the past be past.

## ARTEVELDE.

Here on the doorstep of my father's house  
 The blood of his they spilt is seen no more.  
 But when I was a child I saw it there;  
 For so long as my widow-mother lived  
 Water came never near the sanguine stain.  
 She loved to show it me, and then with awe,  
 But hoarding still the purpose of revenge,  
 I heard the tale — which like a daily prayer  
 Repeated to a rooted feeling grew —  
 How long he fought, how falsely came like friends  
 The villains Guisebert Grutt and Simon Bette,  
 All the base murder of the one by many.

Even such a brutal multitude as they  
 Who slew my father — yea, who slew their own,  
 (For like one had he ruled the parricides)  
 Even such a multitude thou 'dst have me govern.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Why, what if Jacques Artevelde was killed?  
 He had his reign, and that for many a year,  
 And a great glory did he gain thereby.  
 And as for Guisebert Grutt and Simon Bette,  
 Their breath is in their nostrils as was his.  
 If you be as stout-hearted as your father,  
 And mindful of the villanous trick they played him,  
 Their hour of reckoning is well-nigh come.  
 Of that, and of this base false-hearted league  
 They 're making with the Earl, these two to us  
 Shall give account.

ARTEVELDE.

They cannot render back  
 The golden bowl that 's broken at the fountain,  
 Or mend the wheel that 's broken at the cistern,  
 Or twist again the silver cord that 's loosed.  
 Yea, life for life, vile bankrupts as they are,  
 Their worthless lives, for his of countless price;  
 Is their whole wherewithal to pay their debt.  
 Yet retribution, is a goodly thing,  
 And it were well to wring the payment from them  
 Even to the utmost drop of their heart's blood.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Then will I call the people to the square,  
 And speak for your election.

ARTEVELDE.

Not so fast.

Your vessel, Van den Bosch, hath felt the storm :  
 She rolls dismasted in an ugly swell,  
 And you would make a jury-mast of me,  
 Whereon to spread the tatters of your canvas.  
 And what am I ? — Why, I am as the oak  
 Which stood apart, far down the vale of life,  
 Growing retired beneath a quiet sky.  
 Wherefore should this be added to the wreck ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

I pray you, speak it in the Burghers' tongue ;  
 I lack the scholarship to talk in tropes.

ARTEVELDE.

The question, to be plain, is briefly this :  
 Shall I, who 'chary of tranquillity,  
 Not busy in this factious city's broils,  
 Nor frequent in the market-place, eschewed  
 The even battle, — shall I join the rout ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Times are sore changed I see ; there's none in Ghent  
 That answers to the name of Artevelde.  
 Thy father did not carp nor question thus  
 When Ghent invoked his aid. The days have been  
 When not a citizen drew breath in Ghent  
 But freely would have died in Freedom's cause.

ARTEVELDE.

With a good name thou christenest the cause.  
 True, to make choice of despots is some freedom,  
 The only freedom for this turbulent town,

Rule her who may. And in my father's time  
 We still were independent, if not free ;  
 And wealth from independence, and from wealth  
 Enfranchisement will partially proceed.  
 The cause, I grant thee, Van den Bosch, is good ;  
 And were I linked to earth no otherwise  
 But that my whole heart centered in myself,  
 I could have tossed you this poor life to play with,  
 Taking no second thought. But as things are  
 I will revolve the matter warily,  
 And send thee word betimes of my conclusion.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Betimes it must be, for the White-Hood chiefs  
 Meet two hours hence, and ere we separate  
 Our course must be determined.

ARTEVELDE.

In two hours,  
 If I be for you, I will send this ring  
 In token I have so resolved. Farewell.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Philip Van Artevelde, a greater man  
 Than ever Ghent beheld we'll make of thee,  
 If thou be bold enough to try this venture.  
 God give thee heart to do so. Fare thee well.

[*Exit* VAN DEN BOSCH.]

ARTEVELDE (*after a long pause*).

Is it vain glory that thus whispers me  
 That 't is ignoble to have led my life  
 In idle meditations — that the times



Demand me, that they call my father's name.  
Oh! what a fiery heart was his! such souls  
Whose sudden visitations daze the world,  
Vanish like lightning, but they leave behind  
A voice that in the distance far away  
Wakens the slumbering ages. Oh! my father!  
Thy life is eloquent, and more persuades  
Unto dominion than thy death deters;  
For that reminds me of a debt of blood  
Descended with my patrimony to me,  
Whose paying off would clear my soul's estate.

*Enter CLARA.*

CLARA.

Was some one here? I thought I heard you speak.

ARTEVELDE.

You heard me speak?

CLARA.

I surely thought I heard you,  
Just now, as I came in.

ARTEVELDE.

It may be so.

CLARA.

Was no one here then?

ARTEVELDE.

No one, as you see.

CLARA.

Why then I trust the orator your tongue,

Found favor with the audience your ears ;  
 But this poor orator of mine finds none,  
 For all at once, I see they droop and flag.  
 Will you not listen ? I've a tale to tell.

ARTEVELDE (*as suddenly resuming himself*).

My fairest, sweetest, best beloved girl !  
 Who in the whole world would protect thy youth  
 If I were gone ?

CLARA.

Gone ! where ? what ails you, Philip ?

ARTEVELDE.

Nowhere, my love. Well, what hast thou to tell ?

CLARA.

When I came home, on entering the hall  
 I stared to see the household all before me.  
 There was the steward sitting on the bench,  
 His head upon his hands between his knees.  
 In the oak chair old Ursel sate upright,  
 Swaying her body — so — from side to side,  
 Whilst maids and varlets stood disconsolate round.  
 What cheer ? quoth I. But not a soul replied.  
 Is Philip well ? Yea, madam, God be praised.  
 Then what dost look so gloomy for, my friend ?  
 Alack-a-day, the stork ! then all chimed in,  
 The stork, the stork, the stork ! What *he* is sick ?  
 No madam ; sick ! — he's gone — he's flown away.  
 Why then, quoth I, God speed him ; speaking so,  
 To raise their hearts, but they were all-too-heavy.  
 And Philip, to say truth, I could have wished  
 This had not happened.

ARTEVELDE.

I remember now,  
I thought I missed his clatter all night long.

CLARA.

Old Ursel says the sign proved never false  
In all her time,— and she's so very old!  
And then she says that Roger was esteemed  
The wisest stork in Ghent, and flew away  
But twice before ;— the first time in the night  
Before my father took that office up  
Which proved so fatal in the end, and then  
The second time, the night before he died.

ARTEVELDE.

Sooner or later, something, it is certain,  
Must bring men to their graves. Our every act  
Is death's forerunner. It is but the date  
That puzzles us to fix. My father lived  
In that ill-omened office many a year,  
And men had augured he must die at last  
Without the stork to aid. If this be all  
The wisest of his tribe can prophecy,  
I am as wise as he. Enough of this.  
Thou hast been visiting thy friend to day,—  
The Lady Adriana.

CLARA.

I come thence :  
She is impatiently expecting you.

ARTEVELDE.

Can she with such impatience flatter one  
So slothful and obscure as Artevelde ?

CLARA.

How mean you ?

ARTEVELDE.

Clara, know I not your sex ?  
Is she not one of you ? Are you not all,  
All from the shade averse ? all prompt and prone  
To make your idol of the million's idol ?  
Had I been one of these rash White-Hood chiefs,  
Who live by military larceny,  
Then might I well believe that she would wait  
Impatiently my coming.

CLARA.

There you 're wrong ;  
She never loved the White-Hoods.

ARTEVELDE.

She were wise  
In that unloving humor to abide.  
To wed a White-Hood, other ills apart,  
Would put in jeopardy her fair possessions.  
Fatal perchance it might be to her wealth ;  
Fatal it surely would be to her weal.  
Farewell her peace, if such a one she loved.

CLARA.

Go ask her, Philip, — ask her whom she loves,  
And she will tell you it is no such man.  
Why go you not ?

ARTEVELDE.

My mind is not at ease.  
Yet I am going — to my chamber now,

Where let me own an undisturbed half hour  
Of rumination ; — afterward to her.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE VII.

THE ENTRANCE HALL OF THE HOUSE VAN MERESTYN.

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE, with Attendants.*

VAN ARTEVELDE.

Bear thou these letters to my steward ; say  
That messengers must straight proceed with them  
To Grammont and elsewhere, as superscribed ;  
And should mishap occur to any one  
Upon the road, which is not overfree,  
I charge me with ten masses for his soul.

(*To another.*)

My service to the noble Lord of Occo ;  
I thank him for his counsel, and will weigh it.

(*To the rest.*)

I will return alone. If any come  
To seek me at my house, entreat their stay.

(*They withdraw, and a WAITING-WOMAN enters.*)

This, if I err not, is the pretty wench  
That waits upon my lady. What, fair maid !  
Thy mistress having comeliness to spare,

Hath given thee of it. She's within, I think,  
Or else wert thou a truant.

WAITING-WOMAN.

Sir, she is.

VAN ARTEVELDE.

Acquaint her then that I attend her leisure.

[*Exit* WAITING-WOMAN.]

There is but one thing that still clogs me here.

(*a pause.*)

To bring a cloud upon the summer day  
Of one so happy and so beautiful, —  
It is a hard condition. For myself  
I know that the circumstance of life  
In all its changes can so far afflict me  
As makes anticipation much worth while.  
But she is younger, — of a sex beside  
Whose spirits are to our's as flame to fire,  
More sudden and more perishable too;  
So that the gust wherewith the one is kindled  
Extinguishes the other. Oh she is fair!  
As fair as Heaven to look upon! as fair  
As ever vision of the Virgin blest  
That weary pilgrim, resting by the fount,  
Beneath the palm, and dreaming to the tune  
Of flowing waters, duped his soul withal.  
It was permitted in my pilgrimage,  
To rest beside the fount beneath the tree,  
Beholding there no vision, but a maid  
Whose form was light and graceful as the palm,  
Whose heart was pure and jocund as the fount,

And spread a freshness and a verdure round.  
 This was permitted in my pilgrimage,  
 And loth am I to take my staff again.  
 Say that I fall not in this enterprise —  
 Still must my life be full of hazardous turns,  
 And they that house with me must ever live  
 In imminent peril of some evil fate.  
 — Make fast the doors ; heap wood upon the fire ;  
 Draw in your stools and pass the goblet round,  
 And be the prattling voice of children heard.  
 Now let us make good cheer — but what is this ?  
 Do I not see, or do I dream I see  
 A form that midmost in the circle sits  
 Half visible, his face deformed with scars,  
 And foul with blood — Oh yes — I know it — there  
 Sits DANGER with his feet upon the hearth.

*(Pauses for some time, and then resumes in  
 a livelier tone.)*

Still for myself, I fear not, but that I,  
 Taking what comes, leaving what leave I must,  
 Could make a sturdy struggle through the world.  
 But for the maid, the choice were better far  
 To win her dear heart back again if lost,  
 And stake it upon some less dangerous cast.

*(Re-enter WAITING-WOMAN.)*

WAITING-WOMAN.

My mistress, Sir, so please you, takes her walk  
 Along the garden terrace, and desires  
 That you 'll go forth to meet her.

ARTEVELDE.

For if fate  
 Had done its best to single out a soul  
 Most formed for peaceful virtues ——— ah! I come.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE VII.

A GARDEN.

ARTEVELDE *and* ADRIANA.

ARTEVELDE.

I have some little overstayed my time.  
 First let me plead for pardon of that trespass.

ADRIANA.

I said to Clara when the sun went down,  
 Now if— though truly 't is impossible—  
 He come not ere yon blushing cloud grows grey,  
 His promises are no more worth than bubbles.  
 And look how grey it is!

ARTEVELDE.

A hectic change.  
 The smiling dawn, the laughing blue-eyed day,  
 The grey-beard eve incessantly pass on,  
 Fast fleeting generations born of time,  
 And buried in eternity — they pass  
 And not a day resigns its little life



And enters into darkness, that can say  
 'Lo! I was fair, and such as I have been  
 My issue shall be. Lo! I cast abroad  
 Such affluence of glory over earth,  
 That what had been but goodly to the sight,  
 Was made magnificent, what had been bare  
 Showed forth a naked beauty — in all this  
 Was I thus rich, and that which I possessed  
 To-morrow shall inherit.' False as hope!  
 To-morrow's heritage is cloud and storm.

## ADRIANA.

Oh what a moody moralist you grow!  
 Yet in the even-down letter you are right;  
 For Ursel, who is weather-wise, says always  
 That when the sun sets red with the wind south,  
 The morrow shall be stormy. What of that?  
 Oh! now I know; the fish won't take the bait.  
 I wonder what delight you take in fishing!  
 Were I to hang upon a river's marge  
 So tediously, angling, angling still,  
 The fiend that watches our impatient fits  
 Would some time tempt me to jump headlong in.  
 And you — you cannot quit it for a day!  
 Have I not read your sadness?

## ARTEVELDE.

Have you so?

Oh! you are cunning to divine men's thoughts.  
 But come what may to-morrow, we have now  
 A tranquil hour, which let us entertain  
 As though it were the latest of its kind.

ADRIANA.

Why should we think it so ?

ARTEVELDE.

Sweet Adriana,  
I trust that many such may come to you ;  
But for myself, I feel as if life's stream  
Were shooting o'er some verge, to make a short,  
An angry and precipitate descent,  
Thenceforward much tormented on its way.

ADRIANA.

What can have filled you with such sad surmises ?  
You were not wont to speak despondently.

ARTEVELDE.

Nor do I now despond. All my life long  
I have beheld with most respect the man  
Who knew himself and knew the ways before him,  
And from amongst them chose considerately,  
With a clear foresight, not a blindfold courage ;  
And, having chosen, with a steadfast mind  
Pursued his purposes. I trained myself  
To take my place in high or low estate  
As one of that small order of mankind.  
Wherefore, though I indulge no more the dream  
Of living as I hoped I might have lived,  
A life of temperate and thoughtful joy,  
Yet I repine not, and from this time forth  
Will cast no look behind.

ADRIANA.

Oh Artevelde !

What can have made you so mysterious ?  
 What change hath come since morning ? Oh ! how  
 The words and looks which seemed all confidence  
 To me at least — how soon are they recalled !  
 But let them be — it matters not ; I, too,  
 Will cast no look behind — Oh, if I should,  
 My heart would never hold its wretchedness.

## ARTEVELDE.

My gentle Adriana, you run wild  
 In false conjectures : hear me to the end.  
 If hitherto we have not said we loved,  
 Yet hath the heart of each declared its love  
 By all the tokens wherein love delights.  
 We heretofore have trusted in each other,  
 Too wholly have we trusted to have need  
 Of words or vows, pledges or protestations.  
 Let not such trust be hastily dissolved.

## ADRIANA.

I trusted not. I hoped that I was loved,  
 Hoped and despaired, doubted and hoped again,  
 Till this day, when I first breathed freelier,  
 Daring to trust — and now — Oh God, my heart !  
 It was not made to bear this agony —  
 Tell me you love me, or you love me not.

## ARTEVELDE.

I love thee, dearest, with as large a love  
 As e'er was compassed in the breast of man.  
 Hide then those tears, beloved, where thou wilt,  
 And find a resting place for that so wild

And troubled heart of thine ; sustain it here,  
And be its flood of passion wept away.

ADRIANA.

What was it that you said then ? if you love,  
Why have you thus tormented me ?

ARTEVELDE.

Be calm ;  
And let me warn thee, ere thy choice be fixed,  
What fate thou mayst be wedded to with me.  
Thou hast beheld me living heretofore  
As one retired in staid tranquillity.  
The dweller in the mountains, on whose ear  
The accustomed cataract thunders unobserved ;  
The seaman, who sleeps sound upon the deck,  
Nor hears the loud lamenting of the blast,  
Nor heeds the weltering of the plangent wave ; *Note 1.231*  
These have not lived more undisturbed than I.  
But build not upon this ; the swollen stream  
May shake the cottage of the mountaineer,  
And drive him forth ; the seaman, roused at length,  
Leaps from his slumber on the wave-washed deck ;  
And now the time comes fast, when here in Ghent,  
He who would live exempt from injuries  
Of armed men, must be himself in arms.  
This time is near for all, — nearer for me.  
I will not wait upon necessity  
And leave myself no choice of vantage ground,  
But rather meet the times where best I may,  
And mould and fashion them as best I can.  
Reflect then that I soon may be embarked

In all the hazards of these troublous times,  
And in your own free choice take or resign me.

## ADRIANA.

Oh Artevelde, my choice is free no more.  
Be mine, all mine, let good or ill betide.  
In war or peace, in sickness or in health,  
In trouble and in danger and in distress,  
'Through time and through eternity I'll love thee.  
In youth and age, in life and death I'll love thee.  
Here and hereafter, with all my soul and strength.  
So God accept me as I never cease  
From loving and adoring thee next Him ;  
And oh, may He pardon me if so betrayed  
By mortal frailty as to love thee more.

## ARTEVELDE.

I fear, my Adriana, 't is a rash  
And passionate resolve that thou hast made ;  
But how should *I* admonish thee, myself  
So great a winner by thy desperate play.  
Heaven is o'er all, and unto Heaven I leave it.  
That which hath made me weak shall make me strong,  
Weak to resist, strong to requite thy love ;  
And if some tax thou payest for that love,  
Thou shalt receive it from love's exchequer.  
Now must I go ; I 'm waited for ere this.

## ADRIANA.

Upon this finger be the first tax raised.

*(Draws off a ring, which she gives him.)*

Now what shall I receive ?

ARTEVELDE.

The like from mine.

I had forgot — I have it not to-day :

But in its stead wear this around thy neck,

And on thy lips this impress. Now, good night.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE CHANGES TO BRUGES.AN APARTMENT IN THE PALACE OF THE EARL OF  
FLANDERS.THE EARL *and* SIR WALTER D'ARLON.

D'ARLON.

I marvel, my good lord, you take that knave  
So freely to your counsels.

EARL.

Treason done

Against my enemies secures him mine.

His countrymen of Ghent can ne'er forgive him ;

Which knowing, he will therefore cleave to me.

Besides, he learns the minds of men towards me,

Here and in Ghent, how each man stands affected.

For this and other serviceable arts,

Not out of friendship, do I show him favor.

Have you not seen a jackdaw take his stand

On a sheep's back, permitted there to perch,  
 Less out of kindness to so foul a bird,  
 Than for commodious uses of his beak ?  
 As to the sheep the jackdaw, so to me  
 Is Gilbert Matthew ; from my fleece he picks  
 The vermin that molest me. — Here he comes !

*Enter* GILBERT MATTHEW.

Well, honest Gilbert, are the knights not gone ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Not yet, my lord ; they urge in lieu of lives  
 The forfeiture of sundry burgages,  
 To fill your coffers. I denied them roundly.

EARL.

I bid thee not !

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Lives, lives, my lord, take freely ;  
 But spare the lands and burgages and moneys.  
 The father dead, shall sleep and be forgotten ;  
 The patrimony gone, that makes a wound  
 That's slow to heal ; heirs are above-ground ever.

EARL.

Well, be it so.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

The knights wait here without  
 To take their audience of leave, and bring  
 A new adherent.

EARL.

Give them entrance now.

(GILBERT MATTHEW goes out, and returns  
with SIR SIMON BETTE and SIR GUISE-  
BERT GRUTT.)

SIR SIMON BETTE.

This audience we made bold to crave, my lord,  
To advertise your highness, that our friend  
Of whom we spake, the valiant Lord of Occo,  
Has come here at great hazard in disguise,  
To show how matters now proceed in Ghent.

EARL.

He shall be welcome. Does he wait?

SIR SIMON BETTE.

He does ;  
And with your highness' leave I'll bring him to you.  
[Exit.

EARL.

Think'st thou he may be steadied ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

At this time  
He has great power to do your highness service :  
And your free pardon for all past misdeeds,  
And promise of preferment, will do much  
To make him wholly yours.

EARL.

Well, well, so be it.  
'Tis no such urgent need we have of him,  
But if he be so contrite, it is well.



*Re-enter SIR SIMON BETTE with Occo.*

You 're a bold man, my Lord of Occo, you  
That have so long borne arms against your liege,  
Without safe-conduct to have ventured here.

occo.

My sole safe-conduct is the good intent  
I bear to your affairs, my noble lord ;  
Nought else impelled me hither, and nought else,  
I trust, is needed for my safe return.

EARL.

Thou shalt return in safety. Say, what news  
Bring'st thou from Ghent ?

occo.

My lord, peace, peace is there  
The only cry, except with desperate chiefs,  
Who are so weak, that fair conditions now  
Would draw their followers from them to a man.

EARL.

Our proffer of conditions is made known  
Already to our good Sir Simon Bette,  
And Guisebert Grutt.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

My lord is pleased to grant  
Indemnity to all save some three hundred ;  
The list to be hereafter named by him,  
And dealt with at his pleasure.

occo.

This is well!

These terms are just and merciful indeed!  
 But then they must be proffered presently.  
 You know, my lord, the humor we of Ghent } *see 126 11*  
 Have still indulged — we never cry for peace } *p. 231*  
 But when we 're out of breath; give breathing time,  
 And ere the echo of our cry of peace  
 Have died away, we drown it with war! war!  
 Even now the faction hopes to be redeemed  
 By a new leader, Philip of Artevelde.

EARL.

Ha! Artevelde? that name is ominous.  
 Whenever sunshine has come near my house,  
 An Artevelde has cast his shadow there.  
 I have not heard the name of Artevelde  
 Since that usurper Jacques died the death.  
 This Philip then was in his infancy.  
 What is he made of? Of his father's metal?  
 A dangerous man, in truth, Sirs, if he be.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Oh fear him not, my lord; his father's name  
 Is all that from his father he derives.  
 He is a man of singular address  
 In catching river-fish. His life hath been,  
 Till now, more like a peasant's or a monk's,  
 Than like the issue of so great a man.

occo.

Yet is his name so worshipped of the people,  
 That were the time and scope permitted him

To grow expert, some danger might come of him.  
Wherefore 't were well to note him on your list.

EARL.

Let him be noted. Think you, then, Sir Guy,  
That they 'll accept our terms, or still hold out ?

occo.

Let these good knights make instant speed to Ghent,  
And call the burghers to the market-place.  
Then let to-morrow, at their bidding, wear  
The aspect of to-day, and all will prosper.  
Take them whilst yet Nivelles is in their thoughts.

EARL.

You counsel well. Prepare, Sirs, to depart ;  
We 'll have the terms engross'd, and send them you.  
Farewell, my lord ; farewell, Sir Simon Bette ;  
Sir Guisebert Grutt, farewell. — We 'll send them you.

*[Exeunt the EARL, GILBERT MATTHEW, OCCO,  
and SIR SIMON BETTE : as SIR GUISEBERT  
GRUTT is following, he is detained by  
D'ARLON.]*

D'ARLON.

One word, fair Sir.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

My good lord, at your pleasure.

D'ARLON.

I have a foolish errand in your town.  
There is a damsel . . . but your head is white ;  
You will not heed me.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

Pray proceed, my lord.  
I have not yet forgotten how in youth  
A damsel's love, amongst the amorous,  
Was more than bed of down or morning posset.

D'ARLON.

In brief, kind Sir, conveyance hence to Ghent  
Is what I crave. Methinks, amongst your train,  
And habited like them, I well could pass  
And no one mark me.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

Sir, you 're free to try.  
And if our friends should still be uppermost,  
You will risk nothing. Should the faction reign,  
You shall do well to keep your secret close  
And make your best speed back.

D'ARLON.

Leave that to me.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—GHENT.

## THE HOUSE VAN ARTEVELDE.

He *and* VAN DEN BOSCH.

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

When they were brought together in the square,  
I spake. I told them that they lacked a chief;  
For though they saw that dangers compassed them,  
Amongst their captains there was none could win  
The love of all, but still some guild or craft  
Would stone him if they might. I bade them think  
How Jacques Artevelde from lowest state  
Had borne this city up to sovereign sway;  
And how his son had lived aloof from strife,  
To none bore malice, and wished well to all.  
With that they caught thy name and shouted much,  
And some old men swore they remembered well,  
In the good times of Jacques Artevelde,  
When they were young, that all the world went right,  
And after he was dead, that they grew old;  
And wenches who were there said Artevelde  
Was a sweet name and musical to hear.  
In brief, for these and other weighty reasons

They were resolved to choose thee for their chief.  
 But 'soft! my friends,' quoth I, 'ye know not yet  
 How he inclines to that you 'd put upon him;  
*He* hath no friends and favorites to reward;  
*He* hath no adverse faction to repress;  
 Of what avail to him were power and office?  
 But nathless we 'll entreat him.' 'Bring him here,'  
 Was then the cry. 'More meet it were, my friends,'  
 Quoth I, 'that we go seek this noble youth;  
 On such high worth we humbly should attend,  
 And not expect such worth should wait on us.'  
 To this they gave assent, and will be here  
 Soon as the crafts are gathered all together.

ARTEVELDE.

Good! When they come, I'll speak to them.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

'T were well.

Thou canst not miss to please them in this mood.  
 The trial will be after, when they flag,  
 And want a long spur-rowel in their bellies.  
 Thou lack'st experience to deal with men;  
 Thou must take counsel.

ARTEVELDE.

I will hear it always.

But yet my task methinks were easy learnt.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Canst learn to bear thee high amongst the commons?  
 Canst thou be cruel? To be esteemed of them  
 Thou must not set more store by lives of men  
 Than lives of larks in season.

ARTEVELDE.

Be it so.

I can do what is needful. Where, I pray you,  
Abide the messengers of peace from Bruges ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

They lodged last night i' the Clothier's-square. God's  
blood !  
They thought their houses not so safe, belike.

ARTEVELDE.

Why thought they that ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

They entered by that quarter ;  
And near Sir Simon's, which they reached the first,  
I had provided some picked men to meet them.  
But spite my cautions, they brake forth too soon,  
And that with howls that Bruges itself might hear.

ARTEVELDE.

So the knights took the warning ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

They drew back,  
And galloped to the square, the while their train  
Stood fast and fought ; and it is worthy note,  
That one amongst them shouted in the fray  
The D'Arlon's war-cry, whence he may be known  
Of that lord's following, and wherefore here  
We well may guess.

ARTEVELDE.

Had *he* been slain 't were well :  
Had others been 't were not. If I rule Ghent,

No man shall charge me that his life or goods  
 Are less secure than mine, so he but keep  
 The laws that I have made. Believe me, Peter,  
 Thy scheme of rule is too disorderly.  
 Thy force still spends, and not augments itself.  
 To make the needy and the desperate thine,  
 Thou gav'st them up the plunder of the rich ;  
 Now these grown desperate and needy too,  
 Raise up a host against thee ; — whereupon,  
 No spoil remaining, thy good friends depart.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

God's curse go with them !

ARTEVELDE.

Like enough it may.  
 They've carried it about these five long years ;  
 They took it with them to the peasant's hut —  
 They took it with them to the Burgher's stall —  
 A roving curse it followed at their heels —  
 And like enough it will abide amongst them.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Hark ! here they come.

*(Shouts of 'Artevelde !' are heard from without.)*

Out, out, and show thyself.

*[Exeunt.]*



## SCENE II.

THE STREET IN FRONT OF VAN ARTEVELDE'S HOUSE.

HE *and* VAN DEN BOSCH.*The multitude below.*

ARTEVELDE.

My friends, I thank you for the good respect  
 In which you hold me ; Sirs, I thank you all.  
 You say that for the love you bore my father,  
 You and your predecessors, you 'd have me  
 What he was once, — your captain. Verily  
 I think you do not well remember, Sirs,  
 'The end of all the love ye bore my father.  
 He was the noblest and the wisest man  
 That ever ruled in Ghent ; yet, Sirs, ye slew him.  
 By his own door, here where I stand, ye slew him ;  
 What then am I to look for from your loves ?  
 If the like trust ye should repose in me,  
 And then in likewise cancel it, — my friends,  
 That were an ill reward.

SEVERAL BURGHERS.

Nay, master Philip !

ARTEVELDE.

Oh Sirs ! I know ye look not to such end,  
 Nor may it be yourselves that bring it round ;  
 But he who rules must still displeasure some,  
 And he should have protection from the many,

So long as he shall serve the many well.  
 Sirs, to that end his power must be maintained ;  
 The power of peace and war, of life and death,  
 He must have absolute. How say ye, Sirs ?  
 Will ye bestow this power on me ? if so,  
 Shout 'Artevelde,' and ye may add to that,  
 'Captain of Ghent,' — if not, go straightway home.

(*All shout 'Artevelde, Captain of Ghent !'*)

ARTEVELDE.

So be it.  
 Now listen to your Captain's first command.  
 It has been heretofore the use of some  
 On each cross accident, here or without,  
 To cry aloud for peace. This is most hurtful.  
 It much unsettles brave men's minds, disturbs  
 The councils of the wise, and daunts the weak.  
 Wherefore my pleasure is, and I decree,  
 That whoso shall but talk of terms of peace  
 From this time forth, save in my private ear,  
 Be deemed a traitor to the town of Ghent,  
 And me its Captain ; and a traitor's death  
 Shall that man die.

BURGHERS.

He shall, he shall, he shall.  
 We'll kill the slave outright.

ARTEVELDE.

No : mark me further.  
 If any citizen shall slay another  
 Without my warranty by word or sign,  
 Although that slayer be as true as steel,

This other treacherous as Iscariot's self,  
The punishment is death.

(*A pause.*)

Ye speak no word.

What do we fight for, friends? for liberty?  
What is that liberty for which we fight?  
Is it the liberty to slay each other?  
Then better were it we had back again  
Roger D'Auterne, the bailiff. No, my friends,  
It is the liberty to choose our chief,  
And bow to none beside. Now ye choose me,  
And in that choice let each man be assured  
'That none but I alone shall dare to judge him.  
Whoso spills blood without my warranty,  
High man or low, rich man or poor, shall die.

BURGHERS.

The man shall die, he shall deserve to die.  
We'll kill him on the spot, and that is law.

ARTEVELDE.

Hold, hold, my friends, ye are too hasty here.  
*You shall not* kill him; 't is the headsman's part,  
Who first must have my warrant for his death.

BURGHERS.

Kill him who likes, the man shall die; that's law.

ARTEVELDE.

What further knowledge of my rules ye need  
Ye peradventure may obtain, my friends,  
More aptly from my practice than my speech.  
Now to the Stadt-House — bring the litter, fellows —  
And there the deans of crafts shall do me homage.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Ho! stand apart. Bring in the litter, varlets.  
Now Sirs, let's hear your voices as you go.

(*Exeunt, with shouts of 'Artevelde.'*)

## SCENE III.

THE HOUSE VAN MERESTYN.

SIR WALTER D'ARLON *and* CLARA VAN ARTEVELDE.

*She is engaged in binding up his arm, which is  
wounded.*

CLARA.

False Knight, thou com'st to see thy ladye love,  
And canst not stay thy stomach for an hour,  
But thou must fight i' the street. Thy hungry sword—  
Could it keep lent no longer? By my faith,  
Thou shalt do penance at thy lady's feet  
The live-long night for this.

D'ARLON.

Gramercy, lady!

'T were a sharp trial, one man to keep lent  
Whilst all around kept carnival; the sin  
Was in the stomachs of your citizens:  
But I will do the penance not the less.

CLARA.

Go to; confess thyself; make a clean breast.  
 Thou 'dst vowed a vow to some fair dame at Bruges  
 To kill for her dear love a score of burghers.  
 Nay, it is certain — never cross thyself —  
 Hold up this arm — alas! there was a time  
 When knights were true and constant to their loves,  
 And had but one a-piece — an honest time.  
 Knights were knights then; God mend the age, say I!  
 True as the steel upon their backs were they,  
 And their one lady's word was gospel law.  
 Would I had lived a hundred years ago!

D'ARLON.

Couldst thou live backward for a hundred years,  
 And then live on a hundred years to come,  
 Thou 'dst not find one to love thee trulier  
 Than I have loved.

CLARA.

What, what! no truer knight?  
 A seemly word forsooth! Hast many more such?  
 No truer knight? — 'T is thus you great lords live,  
 With flatterers round you all your golden youth,  
 And know yourselves as much as I know Puck.  
 Your heads so many bee-hives; honeyed words  
 Swarm in your ears, and other from your mouth  
 Go buzzing out to ply for sweets abroad;  
 And so your summer wastes, till some cold night  
 The cunning husbandman comes stealthily,  
 And there is fire and brimstone for my lords!  
 Hold up this arm, — let go my hand, I say —  
 Am I to tie thy bandage with my teeth?

D'ARLON.

Sweet Clara, no ! they may not do that office ;  
The tying of the tongue 's too much for them.

CLARA.

Ah — there you go, — another more such word  
And you 're a banished man — gone — gone from Ghent  
Never to come again, never hear more  
The music of her bells — no, nor the chimes  
So oft rung out to celebrate your coming  
By this poor tongue of mine.

D'ARLON.

Sweet are the chimes  
Of that same never-weary sacristan ;  
And here upon his temple's ruby gates  
Might I devoutly —

CLARA.

Go, here 's Adriana.

*Enter ADRIANA.*

ADRIANA.

My lord — good heaven ! Your arm — I fear you 're  
hurt.

CLARA.

Hold, hush ! I 'll answer for thee. Merely a scratch ;  
A scratch, fair lady, — that, and nothing more.  
It gives us no concern ; 't was thus we got it :  
Riding along the streets of this good town,  
A score of burghers met us, peaceful drones —

Saying their prayers, belike ; — howe'er that be,  
 The senseless men were wrapped in such abstraction  
 They heeded not our lordship ; whereat we,  
 Unused to such demeanor, shook ourselves,  
 And pricked them with our lance. A fray ensued,  
 And lo ! as we were slaying some fourteen  
 That stayed our passage, it pleased Providence,  
 Of whom the meanest may be instruments,  
 Thus gently to chastise us on the arm,  
 Doubtless for some good cause, though what, we know  
 not.

ADRIANA.

My lord, you know her ; she is ever thus,  
 Still driving things against you to your face,  
 And when you 're gone, if I should chance let fall  
 A word, or but a hint of censure, as —  
 My Lord of Arlon is too rash, too hot,  
 Too anything —

CLARA.

She sighs and says, too true.

ADRIANA.

No verily. But why, my lord, come here  
 At all this hazard only to be railed at ?

CLARA.

Yes, tell us why.

D'ARLON.

Behold the very cause.

*Enter ARTEVELDE.*

ARTEVELDE (*as he enters.*)

Let my guard wait without.

CLARA.

His guard! What's this!

ARTEVELDE.

My Lord of Arlon, God be with your lordship!  
And guide you upon less adventurous tracks  
Than this you tread. I'll speak with you anon.  
My Adriana! victim that thou art!  
Thy lover should have been some gentle youth  
In gay attire, with laughter on his lips,  
Who'd nestle in thy bosom all night long,  
And ne'er let harness clink upon thine ears,  
Save only in romaunt and roundelay.  
Such is what should be, and behold what is!  
A man of many cares new taken up,  
To whom there's nothing more can come in life,  
But what is serious and solicitous.  
One who betakes him to his nuptial bed,  
His thoughts still busy with the watch and ward;  
And if his love breathe louder than her wont,  
Starts from his sleep, and thinks the bells ring backwards.  
A man begirt with eighty thousand swords,  
Scarce knowing which are in the hands of friends  
And which against him; — such a sort of man  
Thy lover is — his fate for life or death  
Linked to a cause which some deem desperate.



Such is Van Artevelde, for he is now  
Chief Captain of the White-Hoods and of Ghent.

CLARA.

Nay! is it even so!

ARTEVELDE.

Even so it is.

ADRIANA.

And thou art captain of these savages!  
And thou wilt trample with them through the blood  
Of fellow-men, alas it may be, too,  
Of fellow-citizens — for what care they?

etc  
223 { And thou who wert a gentle-hearted man,  
Must lead these monsters where they will!

ARTEVELDE.

Not so.

I purpose but to lead them where *I* will.

ADRIANA.

Then they will turn upon thee; never yet  
Would they endure a chief that crossed their humor.

ARTEVELDE.

That is the patience they've to learn from me.  
The times have tamed them, and mischance of late  
Has forced an iron bit between their teeth,  
By help whereof I hope to rein them round.

CLARA.

Oh, they will murder thee!

ARTEVELDE.

It may be so.  
 But I hope better things ; — yet this is sure,  
 That they *shall* murder me ere make me go  
 The way that is not my way for an inch.

ADRIANA.

Alas ! and is it come to this ! — ah, Philip !

ARTEVELDE.

This I foresaw, and things have fallen out  
 No worse than I forewarned thee that they might.  
 What must be, must. My course hath been appointed ;  
 For I feel that within me which accords  
 With what I have to do. The field is fair,  
 And I have no perplexity or cloud  
 Upon my vision. Every thing is clear.  
 And take this with thee for thy comfort too —  
 That that man is not most in tribulation  
 Who walks his own way, resolute of mind,  
 With answerable skill to pick his steps.  
 Men in their places are the men that stand,  
 And I am strong and stable on my legs ;  
 For though full many a care from this time forth  
 Must harbour in my head, my heart is fresh,  
 And there is but this trouble touches it,  
 I know not what to do with thee.

ADRIANA.

With me,  
 Say'st thou ? — Oh never vex thy heart for that ;  
 Nor think of me so all unworthily  
 As that some chubby merry-making boy

Were fittest for my mate. Nay, said I not —  
 And if I said it not, I say it now, —  
 I'll follow thee through sunshine and through storm ;  
 I will be with thee in thy weal and woe,  
 In thy afflictions, should they fall upon thee,  
 In thy temptations when bad men beset thee,  
 In all the perils which must now press round thee,  
 And, should they crush thee, in the hour of death.  
 If thy ambition, late aroused, was that  
 Which pushed thee on this perilous adventure,  
 Then *I* will be ambitious too, — if not,  
 And it was thy ill fortune drove thee to it,  
 Then I will be unfortunate no less.  
 I will resemble thee in that and all things  
 Wherein a woman may : grave will I be  
 And thoughtful, for already is it gone —  
 The boon that nature gave me at my birth,  
 My own original gaiety of heart.  
 All will I part with to partake thy cares,  
 Let but thy love be with me to the last.

## ARTEVELDE.

Thou sweet enthusiast ! — Calmly, Adriana ;  
 Much happiness shall be thy portion yet.  
 My love is with thee ever — that thou knowest —  
 And thou shalt find thy gaiety again.  
 But bring me through the business of this day,  
 And on the morrow thou shalt see me smile  
 In bridegroom fashion, and my bride shall own  
 The sovereignty of gladness in her heart. —  
 My lord, your pardon ; we consume your time,  
 Which, I'm constrained to say, is short in Ghent.

I hitherto have welcomed you amongst us,  
 And kept the secret of your sojourns here ;  
 So doing, partly for respect to you,  
 And partly for *her* sake, this foolish girl's,  
 My pretty Clara's, who will let me say  
 I had not pleased her else ; but now, my lord,  
 As you have heard, I hold an office here,  
 With duties appertaining, and must needs  
 (With sorrow for your sudden going hence)  
 Make offer of my passport, — good till sun-set.

D'ARLON.

If no discourtesy is meant by this  
 I have but to depart.

CLARA.

Depart ! and wherefore ?

ARTEVELDE.

There 's nothing meant but honor, nothing else,  
 Howe'er to rude appearances enforced.  
 When there is peace between the Earl and Ghent  
 'T will be a joy to me to see again  
 The gallant Lord of Arlon ; till that time  
 We meet not, save in hostile ranks opposed,  
 Or captive, I in Bruges or he in Ghent.

D'ARLON.

Sir, it is not for me to say you nay  
 In your own town, with not a man to back me ;  
 Nor would I willingly distrust your word  
 That all is honorably meant ; for else  
 I scarce should miss to find a future time  
 For fair requital.

ARTEVELDE.

On my faith, my lord,  
I love you and respect you.

D'ARLON.

'T is enough.

Then I depart in peace.

CLARA.

Depart! what's this?  
What's all the coil about? Depart! aye truly,  
That's when I bid him, not an instant sooner.  
Philip has altogether lost his senses.  
Dismiss him thus, and bid him come no more!  
Then what becomes of me? Oh, I'm a child!  
I'm to be whipped for crying after him;  
But let me tell thee, Philip, I'm the child  
Of Jacques Artevelde, and know by that  
I am not likely to sit tamely down  
Beneath a wrong like this. — So look well to it.  
An injury to myself I might forgive,  
But one to D'Arlon —

*(Bursting into tears.)*

Sir, think twice upon it,  
Lest you should lose a sister unawares.

D'ARLON.

Nay, Clara, nay, be not so troubled:

ARTEVELDE.

There —  
You see the humor she is of, my lord;  
But, be my sins confessed, the fault is mine.

An orphan sister, and an only one,  
 What could I less but let her have her will  
 In all things possible? An easy man  
 She still has found me, and knows nothing yet  
 Of opposition to her high commands.  
 You, if you e'er should take her to yourself,  
 May teach her better doctrine. Patience, Clara,  
 Patience, my love; nor let this knight discern  
 His future trials thus presignified  
 In rain and lightning; let him not, my love.

CLARA (*weeping*).

When will he come again?

ARTEVELDE.

When peace comes, dearest.  
 We'll make him welcome then to bower and hall,  
 And thou shalt twine a garland for his brow  
 Of olive and of laurels won from me.

D'ARLON.

Be pacified, sweet Clara; dry your tears.  
 He but deals with me as he has the right  
 And deems himself in duty bound. Such things  
 Shall jar no string between us.

ARTEVELDE.

Nobly said.  
 I leave her in your hands, and hope your aid  
 For bringing her to reason.

D'ARLON.

I entreat  
 One word in private with you ere we part.

ARTEVELDE.

Take in my sister, Adriana — go,  
 Impart to her a portion of that strength  
 Which there is in thee — teach her to subdue  
 The woman in her nature.

CLARA.

I'll not go.  
 You mean to take him from me unawares.

D'ARLON.

He means it not, sweet Clara, be persuaded.  
 Upon the faith and honor of a knight,  
 I'll come to thee again.

CLARA.

And if thou dost not,  
 Upon the faith and honor of a maid  
 I'll never see thee more.

[*Exeunt ADRIANA and CLARA.*]

D'ARLON.

My errand here  
 Is not so wholly idle as no doubt  
 Thou deem'st it. I would first have warned thee off,  
 The office which, with most unhappy haste,  
 Already thou hast clutched. That being vain,  
 I next would bid thee to beware false friends.  
 Look that there be no treason in thy camp;  
 I may not now say more; but be assured  
 'T will be thy life thou fightest for.

ARTEVELDE.

Noble D'Arlon!

It is a grief to me that we should meet  
 In opposition thus. I will look round,  
 And profit by thy warning if I may.  
 Trust me, 't would irk my heart no less than thine,  
 (And may this show in all my acts hereafter,)  
 To enter in alliance with foul play  
 For any earthly meed. Sir, fare you well.

D'ARLON.

Whenso' the choice and noblest of my friends  
 Are bid to memory's feast, then, Artevelde,  
 The place of honor shall be thine. Farewell.

[Exit.

*Enter the CAPTAIN of ARTEVELDE'S GUARD.*

CAPTAIN.

Sir, there's a messenger from Van den Bosch,  
 Who craves to see you instantly: another  
 Says the Lord Occo waits your leisure.

ARTEVELDE (*after a pause, not having attended to  
 him.*)

Ha!

Lord Occo, saidst thou? tell me, what of him?

CAPTAIN.

He waits your leisure, Sir.

ARTEVELDE.

And when comes that?

He shall *not* wait my leisure. And what more?



CAPTAIN.

Sir, Van den Bosch would see you.

ARTEVELDE.

It is well :

I will attend the Lord of Occo first,  
And Van den Bosch shall find me at my house,  
Some half hour hence. How look we, Sir, abroad ?

CAPTAIN.

The citizens are trooping to the Stadt-House.  
'T is said Sir Simon and Sir Guisebert pass  
From door to door incessantly.

ARTEVELDE.

To beg ?

CAPTAIN.

To gain a strong attendance.

ARTEVELDE.

Wo the while !

A bear, a fiddle, and a pair of monkeys,  
Had sped the service better.

CAPTAIN.

Both mean and notable, and rich and poor,  
Have they solicited, assuring all  
That when it shall be heard what terms of peace  
Are offered, they will hug the messengers  
That after painful travail for their love  
Have brought them such good news.

ARTEVELDE.

I 'll swear they will.

But what? Thou look'st not over cheerily ;  
Think'st thou the knights have made some way then,  
ha ?

CAPTAIN.

The deacons of eight crafts have sided with them,  
And many of the aldermen.

ARTEVELDE.

Ay, truly ?

CAPTAIN.

And all the men of lineage.

ARTEVELDE.

That 's as thou hearest.

CAPTAIN.

The citizens passed by me in the street  
By scores and hundreds, and of them I saw  
The greater part, 't was plain, would stand against us.

ARTEVELDE.

Build up, and then pull down, and then build up, —  
And always in the ruins some are — Well ?

CAPTAIN.

And I 'm afeard, though loth I am to think it,  
A few amongst your guard have fallen off  
At seeing us outnumbered thus.

ARTEVELDE.

Is 't so ?

Why, wherefore should I wish that it were not ?

The more faint hearts fall off the better, Sir ;  
So fear shall purge us to a sound condition.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.

THE DWELLING HOUSE OF THE LORD OF OCCO.

He *and* VAN AESWYN.

OCCO.

The mariners, then, are for us ?

AESWYN.

They are ours.

OCCO.

And these are of the curriers that thou bring'st me ?

AESWYN.

The deacons of that craft — they're backward still :  
They're ever harping upon Artevelde,  
Who told their worships, when they did him homage,  
If his poor humor governed, nothing else  
But leathern jerkins should be worn in Ghent.

OCCO.

We'll deal with them the same as with the fullers.  
So bring them in.

*Exit* VAN AESWYN.

Well done, Sir Curriers !

These precious moments must be given to you !  
The devil curry you for senseless boors !

*Re-enter VAN AESWYN, with the two CRAFTSMEN.*

Good-morrow, masters — Ha ! my valued friend,  
Jacob Van Ryk ; and if my eyes see true,  
Master —————

AESWYN.

Van Muck.

occo.

Tush, tush, Sir ! tell not me.  
Have I forgotten my old friend Van Muck,  
Or any of my friends ? — though time is short,  
And we must scant our greetings. Worthy Sirs,  
We're in a perilous predicament ;  
And I should take no step without advice.  
Rash were it, and a tempting Providence,  
Should I proceed without consulting you.  
We see, Sirs, we must see — we can't but own,  
That we have no choice left us, but of peace,  
Or else destruction. It is come to that.  
Then if we must be subject to the Earl,  
I will confess I'm not so subtle-witted  
To see much difference 'twixt this hour and that,  
The going over to him now at once  
With flesh upon our bones, or holding back  
Till famine wastes it or steel hacks it off :  
I see no difference.

VAN MUCK.

Truly, Sir, nor I.

occo.

Aye, but there is a difference, my friends,  
 Which I forgot. For, hark you in your ear !  
 Those who go over but when all go over,  
 If they escape from pains and penalties,  
 Can scarcely claim much merit with the Earl ;  
 But they who act an independent part,  
 Who take a step or two before the herd,  
 Whilst the will's free, who lead and do not follow —  
 These men have claims ; they have a right to say,  
 Reward us for our voluntary service.  
 Nor will they be unanswered, that I know.  
 ' First serve the first,' is what they say at Bruges.

VAN RYK.

'T is a good proverb, Sir, for early men,  
 And we have ne'er been slack in things of credit ;  
 But we have scruples here. We see it thus :  
 If we should but shout peace with half the town,  
 The Earl would scarce distinguish us from others ;  
 If, on the other hand, we use our weapons  
 Against our friends, they'd call us renegades,  
 And blacken us for false and treacherous knaves.

occo.

Why look ye now ; too surely, should ye shout,  
 And fail in action, 't were no singular service ;  
 There's no great guerdon were deserved by that.  
 The clerkships of the wards (which after peace  
 Must be new filled) would not be won by shouts.  
 But where's the treachery ? My worthy friends,  
 Look at the matter simply as it is.

Here is a town beleagured in such wise  
 That it must needs surrender upon terms.  
 Then come a knot of desperate-minded men,  
 Who, deeming the rendition gives them up  
 To punishment, make head against the rest.  
 These think no shame to say that all must die  
 To save their one — two — three — half-dozen heads,  
 From certain hazards. Why, if fall they must,  
 And they would rather 't were by steel than cord,  
 Let them assail us, and let us be men.  
 Are we not free to choose 'twixt peace and war?  
 They — they it is that are so treacherous — they,  
 Who would betray a city to destruction  
 For private and particular ends of theirs.  
 Then let us rally round the public weal,  
 And link our names with that.

VAN RYK.

It must be owned  
 The city's weal doth loudly call upon us;  
 But some of us there are, who recently  
 Swore fealty to Artevelde.

occo.

What then?  
 'That was but for the war — not knowing then  
 That it was ended by your deputies,  
 And peace concluded: answer not so idly.  
 Swore ye not fealty to the Earl before?  
 Come, come, my friends — we're all as one, I see;  
 And let me tell you that the whole of Ghent,  
 Almost the whole, is minded like yourselves.

Strange is it men shall meditate and muse  
 In secret all alike, and show no sign  
 Till a blow's struck, and then they speak it out,  
 And each man finds in each his counterpart ;  
 And, as a sluice were opened, all shall rush  
 To find the self-same level, and pour on  
 To the same end. But I forgot, my friends ;  
 We have to think of what particular mark  
 Should first be aimed at when the blow is struck.

VAN RYK.

So please you, Sir, a cast at Van den Bosch  
 Were not amiss, methinks.

occo.

Well shot, Van Ryk ;  
 But yet not quite the bull's eye.

VAN MUCK.

By the mass,  
 He's shot the bull he had his horns of — Ha !  
 What will Dame Oda say to thee ?

VAN RYK.

Go to !  
 If that's our archery, Frans Fleisch for thee.

occo.

My friends, we'll settle all such scores at will.  
 But is not Ghent more precious than our wives ?  
 And who debauches her ? When she was fain  
 To creep into her long-left lord's embrace,  
 Who came at night and whistled her away ?  
 This is the aggravation that most stirs

The choler of the Earl. The other chiefs,  
 Men that by accidents and long degrees  
 Became entangled in rebellion, — them  
 He can forgive ; but he that plunged plump in,  
 And so new troubled what was settling down,  
 This is the man that he has marked for death.  
 Whoso brings down that head has hit a mark  
 That 's worth five hundred florins. Ha, my friends  
 Who strikes a good stroke with his sword for this ?  
 (*a pause.*)

Van Artevelde must die, you understand me.

(*a. pause again.*)

VAN RYK.

Why, if he must, he must, and there 's an end.

occo.

The Earl must have his life ; who hath the guerdon  
 Is not material save to them that get it.  
 But truly, were the money on my head,  
 And I as sure to die as Artevelde,  
 I'd rather that such men as you should have it,  
 Than see it snatched by luck. When die we must,  
 'T is better that thereby good men should thrive  
 Than snatchers.

VAN RYK.

Saving your displeasure, Sir,  
 'T is said good men ne'er thrive but by good deeds.  
 Now, were it but the slaying Van den Bosch,  
 Or Peter Nuitre, or Frans Ackerman,  
 There 's husbands, widows, orphans, all through Ghent,  
 Would say the deed was good ; but Artevelde



Has, as it were, a creditable name,  
 And men would say we struck not for revenge,  
 But only lucre, which were scandalous ;  
 And also, Sir —

occo (*to a SERVING-MAN, who enters*).

What, sirrah ? — speak — what now ?

(*The SERVING-MAN whispers him.*)

Van Artevelde ! he is not coming here ?  
 Not now, not now ?

SERVING-MAN.

Now, instantly, my lord.

occo.

Masters, I wish you both good-day — good-day.  
 God prosper thee, Van Ryk — Van Muck, farewell.  
 Why op'st thou not the door, thou villain groom ?  
 Think'st thou the burgesses have time to lose ?  
 Farewell at once, Sirs, not to keep you longer  
 When things are all so stirring in the town.  
 You 're needed at your posts, I know ; farewell.

VAN RYK.

My lord, as touching these five hundred florins —

occo.

Just as ye will, Sirs, — any way ye please ;  
 I bid God speed you, and so fare you well.

VAN RYK.

If you would take four hundred from the five,  
 And set the residue on Van den Bosch,

His head I'd bring you in for that much money,  
And Ackerman's for love and pure good-will.

VAN MUCK.

And, Sir, as touching Artevelde —

occo.

Nay, nay,

I will not press it further.

VAN MUCK.

If the florins —

occo.

Peace on your lives, he's here!

*Enter* VAN ARTEVELDE.

ARTEVELDE.

My Lord of Occo, at your pleasure. Ha!  
Attended, too, as I could wish to see you.  
I'd not desire to see a friend of mine  
Better accompanied, — no, nor a foe  
Better encountered than by men like these.  
Jacob Van Ryk, my father loved you much.  
No man knew better, Jacob, than my father,  
Who were the worthiest to be loved and trusted;  
And I, thou seest, have mounted to his seat.  
How the old times come back upon me now!  
I was a very little prating child  
When thou wert wont to attend my father  
Home from the Stadt-House: it was always thou  
Whom he would choose from them that brought him  
home

To ask thy company ; and in thine arms  
 He oft would put me for his more repose,  
 For I was stillest there. Times change, Van Ryk ;  
 Years shift us up and down ; but something sticks ;  
 And for myself, there 's nothing as a man  
 That I love more than what a child I loved.  
 Honest Van Muck, thy hand — thou look'st abashed —  
 Ah, thou bethink'st thee of thy little debt,  
 The money that I lent thee for the close.  
 Why, what of that, man ? Didst thou ever hear  
 An Artevelde would hurt his friend for gold ?  
 Thy debt is cancelled — think no more upon it ;  
 Thou shalt look boldly upward in the world  
 And care for no man. I will settle that  
 This instant with a writing.

occo.

By your leave,

The burgesses are tarried for elsewhere ;  
 They are incontinently going hence.  
 You will forgive their haste, they cannot stay ;  
 Open the doors. Good-day, Sirs, once again.

VAN MUCK.

Master Van Artevelde, I'm more your debtor  
 Than ever I was yet. The Lord requite you,  
 And keep you in your perils near at hand !

VAN RYK.

Master Van Artevelde, God bless you, Sir !  
 And give you grace to know and to discern,  
 And read men's hearts, — the gift your father had.  
 Look for your friends amongst the commons ever ;

An' 't were not for Lord Occo standing here,  
I'd bid you trust in ne'er a lord of Ghent.

[*Exeunt the CRAFTSMEN.*]

ARTEVELDE.

*(After a pause, during which he fixes his eyes  
steadily upon Occo, who maintains an un-  
concerned demeanor.)*

These are ambiguous knaves.

occo.

True craftsmen both ;  
Ever suspicious of nobility.

ARTEVELDE.

That am I not. You had some news to tell,  
So your lieutenant said.

occo.

Intelligence  
Has reached me of the terms the Earl will offer :  
A guarantee of franchises and rights,  
Conditional on some three hundred of us  
Being delivered over to his mercy.

ARTEVELDE.

Of whom then is this number ?

occo.

They must be  
Whomso' the Earl may please to name hereafter.  
The lists are written out, though not divulged ;  
But, what is worthiest note, upon the file  
Your name appears not.

ARTEVELDE.

By my faith, that's strange!  
But are these tidings certain?

OCCO.

Beyond doubt.

ARTEVELDE.

How came you by them, if they be so certain?

OCCO.

They're rumored — very confidently rumored.  
I had them also from my spies at Bruges.  
A most sagacious spy — he saw the lists;  
He never yet deceived me — there's no doubt.

ARTEVELDE.

And what do you advise, if this be truth?

OCCO.

Why, if the town be obstinately bent  
On making peace, my counsel to yourself,  
Whose life peace places not in jeopardy,  
Would be to leave the forward part to us,  
Whose only hope of safety is resistance;  
So that, if we should fall, you still may stand,  
Whatever turn things take. And bear in mind,  
If there be danger and the crafts turn on us,  
To throw yourself amongst the mariners;  
There's none of all the crafts so wholly with us.

ARTEVELDE.

With which of us, my lord?

OCCO.

With one and all.

ARTEVELDE.

Aye, say you so? And my part, as you think,  
 Is to hold back and see you play the game.  
 My apprehension of a leader's part  
 Is different from this. I asked your counsel,  
 And I have not unprofitably heard it:  
 Now I will give you mine, and be you pleased  
 To profit in like sort, lest worse befall you.  
 I too have had my spies upon the watch,  
 And the intelligence they gathered me  
 Mentioned some certain renegades and traitors  
 Who were set down by name. I hereupon  
 Took order for a numerous company,  
 Selected for their hardihood and faith,  
 To be for ever close upon the heels  
 Of these same traitors at all guild-assemblies,  
 And use their weapons on a sign from me.  
 Which matters recommending to your notice,  
 My counsel to you is to stay at home.

[*Exit.*

(*Occo looks after him in silence for some time.* VAN  
 AESWYN enters.)

VAN AESWYN.

My lord, Sir Guisebert Grutt is quite impatient,  
 And sends one message on another's heels  
 To ask why tarry you?

OCCO.

I am not well.

AESWYN.

But they are setting forth immediately ;  
The market-place is full to overflowing.

OCCO.

Hark ye ! he knows it all.

AESWYN.

Van Artevelde ?

OCCO.

Knows every thing.

AESWYN.

And what is to be done ?

OCCO.

I'm ill at ease ; I know not ; what think'st thou ?

AESWYN.

If he but knew it half an hour too soon,  
His knowledge is of small account.

OCCO.

God's-death !

But I am ignorant how long he's known it —  
How many he has practised with and gained —  
How many may have falsely seemed to swerve  
By his direction, only to delude,  
And so embolden me to my destruction.  
I would this hour were past !

AESWYN.

Resolve on something ;  
Take one part or the other, lest it pass,  
And leave you ruined both ways.

OCCO.

God in Heaven!

He told me if I ventured to the meeting,  
His followers should slay me.

AESWYN.

Yours may him;

'T is a fair challenge, let us fight it out.

OCCO.

Why that is bravely said. Then be it so.  
Thou shalt have warrant to fight it out;  
And if we're beaten, I shall stand prepared  
To fly to Bruges with such as choose to follow.  
And hark you! we will not go empty-handed;  
We'll take a prize that's worth a good town's ransom,  
A lady whom thou wot'st of. Pick me out  
Ten of the sturdiest of my body-guard,  
Van Truckler and Van Linden at their head;  
Bid them have horses saddled, and a litter.  
Shouldst thou be worsted in the market-place,  
I will be near to cover thy retreat,  
Till thou mayst reach the gates. God prosper thee!

[Exit.

AESWYN.

O dastard! when the service is of danger  
The follower must lead, and venture all  
On him that ventures nothing. Are we fools?

[Exit.



## SCENE V.

THE HOUSE VAN ARTEVELDE.

(ARTEVELDE in a suit of armor, reclining in a window seat. The PAGE is standing by him.)

ARTEVELDE.

Not to be feared — Give me my sword! Go forth,  
And see what folk be these that throng the street.

[Exit the PAGE.]

Not to be feared is to be nothing here.  
And wherefore have I taken up this office,  
If I be nothing in it? There they go.

(Shouts are heard.)

Of them that pass my house some shout my name,  
But the most part pass silently; and once  
I heard the cry of 'Flanders and the Lion.'

*Re-enter PAGE.*

PAGE.

The knights that newly have arrived from Bruges  
Pass down the streets, my lord, and many with them.

ARTEVELDE.

Give me my cloak and dagger! There, enough —  
Thy service is performed. Go to thy sports,  
But come not near the market-place to-day.

[Exit PAGE.]

To be the chief of honorable men  
 Is honor ; and if dangerous, yet faith  
 Still binds them faster as the danger grows.  
 To be the head of villains, — what is that  
 But to be mind to an unwholesome body —  
 To give away a noble human soul  
 In sad metempsychosis to the brutes,  
 Whose carrion, else exanimate, but gains  
 A moment's life from this, then so infects  
 That all together die the death of beasts.

*(A pause.)*

These hands are spotless yet —  
 Yea, white as when in infancy they strayed  
 Unconscious o'er my mother's face, or closed  
 With that small grasp which mothers love to feel.  
 No stain has come upon them since that time —  
 They have done nothing violent —  
 Of a calm will untroubled servants they,  
 And went about their offices, if here  
 I must not say in purity, in peace.  
 But he they served, — he is not what he was.

*(A Party pass the window, and a voice cries  
 'The Lion for Flanders.')*

That cry again!  
 Sir knights, ye drive me close upon the rocks,  
 And of my cargo you're the vilest bales;  
 So overboard with you! What! men of blood!  
 Can the son better auspicate his arms,  
 Than by the slaying of who slew the father?  
 Some blood may flow because that it needs must,  
 But yours by choice — I'll slay you, and thank God.

*Enter VAN DEN BOSCH.*

VAN DEN BOSCH.

The common-bell has rung! the knights are there;  
Thou must come instantly.

ARTEVELDE.

I come, I come.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Now, master Philip, if thou miss thy way  
Through this affair, we're lost. For Jesus' sake,  
Be counselled now by me; have thou in mind —

ARTEVELDE.

Go to, I need not counsel; I'm resolved,  
Take thou thy stand beside Sir Guisebert Grutt,  
As I by Bette; take note of all I do,  
And do thyself accordingly. Come on.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

## SCENE VI.

THE EXTERIOR OF THE STADT-HOUSE.

*(Two external flights of stone stairs meet in a landing place, or platform, midway in the front of the building and level with the first floor. On this platform appear SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT, with the aldermen of sundry guilds, and the deans of the several crafts of butchers,*

*fishermen, glaziers, and cordwainers. Also VAN ARTEVELDE, VAN DEN BOSCH, FRANS ACKERMAN, VAN NUITRE, and others of their party. SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT descends some steps, and meets SIR SIMON BETTE as he is coming up from the street.)*

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT (*aside to SIR SIMON BETTE*).

God's life, Sir! where is Occo?

SIR SIMON BETTE.

Sick, sick, sick.

He has sent word he's sick, and cannot come.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

Pray God his sickness be the death of him!

SIR SIMON BETTE.

Nay, his lieutenant's here, and has his orders.

VAN DEN BOSCH (*aside to ARTEVELDE*).

I see there's something that hath staggered them.  
Now push them to the point. (*Aloud.*) Make way  
there, Ho!

ARTEVELDE (*coming forward*).

Some citizen hath brought this concourse here.

Who is the man, and what hath he to say?

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

The noble Earl of Flanders of his grace  
Commissions me to speak.

*(Some White-Hoods interrupt him with cries of 'Ghent,' on which there is a great tumult, and they are instantly drowned in the cry of 'Flanders.')*

ARTEVELDE.

What, silence! peace!

Silence, and hear this noble Earl's behests,  
Delivered by this thrice puissant knight.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

First will I speak — not what I'm bid to say,  
But what it most imports yourselves to hear.  
For though ye cannot choose but know it well,  
Yet by these cries I deem that some of you  
Would, much like madmen, cast your knowledge off,  
And both of that and of your reason reft  
Run naked on the sword — which to forefend,  
Let me *remind* you of the things ye know.  
Sirs, when this month began ye had four chiefs  
Of great renown and valor, — Jan de Bol,  
Arnoul le Clerc, and Launoy and Van Ranst.  
Where are they now? and what be ye without them?  
Sirs, when the month began ye had good aid  
From Brabant, Liege, St. Tron, and Huy and Dinant.  
How shall they serve you now? The Earl sits fast  
Upon the Quatre-metiers and the Bridge.  
What aid of theirs can reach you? What supplies?  
I tell you, Sirs, that thirty thousand men  
Could barely bring a bullock to your gates.  
If thus without, how stand you then within?  
Ask of your chatelain, the Lord of Occo;  
Which worthy knight will tell you —

ARTEVELDE (*aside to VAN DEN BOSCH*).

Mark you that?

(*Then aloud to SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.*)

Where is this chatelain, your speech's sponsor?

## SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

He's sick in bed ; but were he here, he'd tell you  
 There's not provision in the public stores  
 To keep you for a day. Such is your plight.  
 Now hear the offer of your natural liege,  
 Moved to compassion by our prayers and tears,  
 Well aided as they were by good Duke Aubert,  
 My Lady of Brabant, and Lord Compelant—  
 To whom our thanks are due, — the Earl says thus :  
 He will have peace, and take you to his love,  
 And be your good lord as in former days ;  
 And all the injuries, hatreds, and ill-will  
 He had against you he will now forget,  
 And he will pardon you your past offences,  
 And he will keep you in your ancient rights ;  
 And for his love and graces thus vouchsafed  
 He doth demand of you three hundred men,  
 Such citizens of Ghent as he shall name,  
 To be delivered up to his good pleasure.

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

Three hundred citizens !

## ARTEVELDE.

Peace, Van den Bosch.  
 Hear we this other knight. Well, worthy Sir,  
 Hast aught to say, or hast not got thy priming,  
 That thus thou gaspest like a droughty pump ?

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

Nay, 't is black bile that chokes him. Come, up with it !  
 Be 't but a gallon it shall ease thy stomach.

## SEVERAL CITIZENS.

Silence! Sir Simon Bette's about to speak.

## SIR SIMON BETTE.

Right worthy burgesses, good men and rich!  
Much trouble ye may guess, and strife had we  
To win his Highness to this loving humor:  
For if ye rightly think, Sirs, and remember,  
You've done him much offence — not of yourselves,  
But through ill guidance of ungracious men.  
For first ye slew his bailiff at the cross,  
And with the Earl's own banner in his hand,  
Which falling down was trampled under foot  
Through heedlessness of them that stood about.  
Also ye burned the castle he loved best,  
And ravaged all his parks at Andrehen,  
All those delightful gardens on the plain.  
And ye beat down two gates at Oudenarde,  
And in the dyke ye cast them upside down.  
Also ye slew five knights of his, and brake  
The silver font wherein he was baptized.  
Wherefore it must be owned, Sirs, that much cause  
He had of quarrel with the town of Ghent.  
For how, Sirs, had the Earl afflicted you  
That ye should thus dishonor him? 't is true  
That once a burgess was detained at Erclo  
Through misbehaviour of the bailiff; still  
He hath delivered many a time and oft  
Out of his prisons burgesses of yours  
Only to do you pleasure; and when late  
By kinsmen of the bailiff whom ye slew,  
Some mariners of yours were sorely maimed,

(Which was an inconvenience to this town,)
   
What did the Earl? To prove it not his act
   
He banished out of Flanders them that did it.
   
Moreover, Sirs, the taxes of the Earl
   
Were not so heavy, but that, being rich,
   
Ye might have borne them; they were not the half
   
Of what ye since have paid to wage this war;
   
And yet had these been double that were half,
   
The double would have grieved you less in peace
   
Than but the half in war. Bethink ye, Sirs,
   
What were the fowage and the subsidies
   
When bread was but four mites that's now a groat?
   
All which considered, Sirs, I counsel you
   
That ye accept this honorable peace,
   
For mercifully is the Earl inclined,
   
And ye may surely deem of them he takes
   
A large and liberal number will be spared,
   
And many here, who least expect his love,
   
May find him free and gracious. Sirs, what say ye?

## ARTEVELDE.

First, if it be your pleasure, hear me speak.

*(Great tumult, and cries of 'Flanders!')*

What, Sirs! not hear me? was it then for this
   
Ye made me your chief captain yesternight,
   
To snare me in a trust, whereof I bear
   
The name and danger only, not the power?

*(The tumult increases.)*

Sirs, if we needs must come to blows, so be it;
   
For I have friends amongst you who can deal them.



SIR SIMON BETTE (*aside to SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.*)

Had Occo now been here! but lacking him  
It must not come to that.

SIR GUISEBERT GRUTT.

My loving friends,  
Let us behave like brethren as we are,  
And not like listed combatants. Ho, peace!  
Hear this young bachelor of high renown,  
Who writes himself your captain since last night,  
When a few score of varlets, being drunk,  
In mirth and sport so dubbed him. Peace, Sirs! hear  
him.

ARTEVELDE.

Peace let it be, if so ye will; if not,  
We are as ready as yourselves for blows.

ONE OF THE CITIZENS.

Speak, master Philip, speak and you 'll be heard.

ARTEVELDE.

I thank you, Sirs; I knew it could not be  
But men like you must listen to the truth.  
Sirs, ye have heard these knights discourse to you  
Of your ill fortunes, telling on their fingers  
The worthy leaders ye have lately lost.  
True, they were worthy men, most gallant chiefs;  
And ill would it become us to make light  
Of the great loss we suffer by their fall.  
They died like heroes; for no recreant step  
Had e'er dishonored them, no stain of fear,  
No base despair, no cowardly recoil.

They had the hearts of freemen to the last,  
And the free blood that bounded in their veins  
Was shed for freedom with a liberal joy.  
But had they guessed, or could they but have dreamed  
The great examples which they died to show  
Should fall so flat, should shine so fruitless here,  
That men should say ' For liberty these died  
Wherefore let us be slaves,' — had they thought this,  
Oh, then, with what an agony of shame,  
Their blushing faces buried in the dust,  
Had their great spirits parted hence for heaven!  
What! shall we teach our chroniclers henceforth  
To write that in five bodies were contained  
The sole brave hearts of Ghent! which five defunct,  
The heartless town, by brainless counsel led,  
Delivered up her keys, stript off her robes,  
And so with all humility besought -  
Her haughty lord that he would scourge her lightly!  
It shall not be — no, verily! for now,  
Thus looking on you as ye stand before me,  
Mine eye can single out full many a man  
Who lacks but opportunity to shine  
As great and glorious as the chiefs that fell. —  
But lo! the Earl is mercifully minded!  
And surely if we, rather than revenge  
The slaughter of our bravest, cry them shame,  
And fall upon our knees, and say we've sinned,  
Then will my lord the Earl have mercy on us,  
And pardon us our letch for liberty!  
What pardon it shall be, if we know not,  
Yet Ypres, Courtray, Grammont, Bruges, they know;

For never can those towns forget the day  
When by the hangman's hands five hundred men,  
The bravest of each guild, were done to death  
In those base butcheries that he called pardons.  
And did it seal their pardons, all this blood?  
Had they the Earl's good love from that time forth?  
Oh, Sirs! look round you lest ye be deceived;  
Forgiveness may be spoken with the tongue,  
Forgiveness may be written with the pen,  
But think not that the parchment and mouth pardon  
Will e'er reject old hatreds from the heart.  
There's that betwixt you been which men remember  
Till they forget themselves, till all's forgot,  
Till the deep sleep falls on them in that bed  
From which no morrow's mischief knocks them up.  
There's that betwixt you been which you yourselves,  
Should ye forget, would then not be yourselves;  
For must it not be thought some base men's souls  
Have ta'en the seats of yours and turned you out,  
If in the coldness of a craven heart  
Ye should forgive this bloody-minded man  
For all his black and murderous monstrous crimes?  
Think of your mariners, three hundred men,  
After long absence in the Indian seas  
Upon their peaceful homeward voyage bound,  
And now all dangers conquered, as they thought,  
Warping the vessels up their native stream,  
Their wives and children waiting them at home  
In joy, with festal preparation made, —  
Think of these mariners, their eyes torn out,  
Their hands chopped off, turned staggering into Ghent,

To meet the blasted eye-sight of their friends!  
 And was not this the Earl? 'T was none but he,  
 No Hauterive of them all had dared to do it,  
 Save at the express instance of the Earl.  
 And now what asks he? Pardon me, Sir knights;

(*To GRUTT and BETTE.*)

I had forgotten, looking back and back  
 From felony to felony foregoing,  
 This present civil message which ye bring;  
 Three hundred citizens to be surrendered  
 Up to that mercy which I tell you of—  
 That mercy which your mariners proved—which  
 steeped

Courtray and Ypres, Grammont, Bruges, in blood!  
 Three hundred citizens,— a secret list,  
 No man knows who — not one can say he's safe —  
 Not one of you so humble but that still  
 The malice of some secret enemy  
 May whisper him to death — and hark — look to it!  
 Have some of you seemed braver than your fellows,  
 Their courage is their surest condemnation;  
 They are marked men — and not a man stands here  
 But may be so — Your pardon, Sirs, again;

(*To GRUTT and BETTE.*)

You are the pickers and the choosers here,  
 And doubtless you're all safe, ye think — ha! ha!  
 But we have picked and chosen, too, Sir knights.  
 What was the law for I made yesterday —  
 What! is it you that would deliver up  
 Three hundred citizens to certain death?  
 Ho! Van den Bosch! have at these traitors — hah —

(*Stabs GRUTT, who falls.*)

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Die, treasonable dog — is that enough?  
Down, felon, and plot treacheries in hell.

(Stabs BETTE.)

*(The White-Hoods draw their swords, with loud cries of 'Treason,' 'Artevelde,' 'Ghent,' and 'The Chaperons Blancs.' A citizen of the other party, who in the former part of the scene had unfurled the Earl's banner, now throws it down and flies; several others are following him, and the aldermen and deans, some of whom had been dropping off towards the end of ARTEVELDE'S speech, now quit the platform with precipitation. VAN AESWYN is crossed by VAN DEN BOSCH.)*

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Die thou, too, traitor. (*Aiming a blow at him.*)

ARTEVELDE (*warding it off*).

Van den Bosch, forbear,  
Up with your weapons, White-Hoods; no more blood.  
Those only are the guilty who lie here.  
Let no more blood be spilt on pain of death.  
Sirs, ye have nought to fear; I say, stand fast;  
No man shall harm you; if he does, he dies.  
Stand fast, or if ye go, take this word with you,  
Philip Van Artevelde is friend with all;  
There's no man lives within the walls of Ghent  
But Artevelde will look to him and his,  
And suffer none to plunder or molest him.  
Haste, Van den Bosch! by Heaven they run like lizards!

Take they not heart the sooner, by St. Paul

They'll fly the city, and that cripples us.  
 Haste with thy company to the west wards,  
 And see thou that no violence be done  
 Amongst the weavers and the fullers — stay —  
 And any that betake themselves to pillage  
 Hang without stint — and hark — begone — yet stay ;  
 Shut the west gate, postern, and wicket too,  
 And catch my Lord of Occo where you can.  
 Stay — on thy life let no man's house be plundered.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

That is not to my mind ; but what of that ?  
 Thou 'st played the game right boldly, and for me,  
 My oath of homage binds me to thee.

ARTEVELDE.

Well,  
 Thou to thy errand then, and I myself  
 Will go from street to street through all the town,  
 To re-assure the citizens ; that done  
 I'll meet thee here again. Form, White-Hoods, form ;  
 Range ten abreast ; I'm coming down amongst you.  
 You Floris, Leefeldale, Spanghen, mount ye here,  
 And bear me down these bodics. Now, set forth.

*(The White-Hoods, by whose shouts of 'Artevelde for Ghent' the latter part of the Scene has been frequently interrupted, now join in a cry of triumph, and carry him off on their shoulders.)*

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.

NIGHT. A WOOD IN THE VICINITY OF BRUGES.

THE LORD OF OCCO AND FOLLOWERS.

OCCO.

No more than half a league to Bruges? then halt,  
 And let the men at arms be drawn together  
 Where the ground's open. Berckel, ride thou on  
 And hail the warders on the walls; make known  
 That for the love which we have shown the Earl  
 We're driven forth of Ghent, and humbly crave  
 His hospitality.

(To VAN AESWYN, *who enters.*)

Where is the lady?

AESWYN.

They've dropped behind some furlong with the litter.

OCCO.

Keep thou beside her, lest she might prevail  
 To make the varlets speak. Let none approach  
 After we pass the gates but men of mine,  
 Nor ever let the litter be unclosed.  
 Now, if we're all in order, march we on.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

A BANQUETTING-HALL IN THE STADT-HOUSE AT  
BRUGES.

*Tables are spread, and the EARL OF FLANDERS, the  
HASE OF FLANDERS, with several Lords, Knights,  
and followers of the Earl, are entertained by the  
Mayor of Bruges, and the Aldermen.*

EARL.

Sir Mayor, we thank you ; 't is a royal feast.

MAYOR.

My gracious lord, the supper is but poor ;  
Very exceeding poor the supper is ;  
And yet the most we can ; your humble hosts,  
Being but meagre citizens God wot,  
Can but purvey your highness what they have,  
A very sorry supper.

ALDERMAN.

True, indeed.

Yet if your highness please to cast it up,  
A thousand florins —

MAYOR.

Hold thy peace, Van Holst ;  
The minstrels twang their cat-gut.

EARL (*aside to the HASE*).

In good time.

If aught could make me cast my supper up,



'T were to taste further of their courtesies.  
Soho, Sir minstrel! what hast got to sing?

VAN HOLST.

That matter has been cared for, please your highness.  
We knew your highness had a skilful ear,  
And 't was not every poesy would please you.  
This is a ditty craftily conceited,  
Trumped up as 't were extempore for the nonce.  
He was no tavern cantabank that made it,  
But a squire minstrel of your highness' court.  
So — sing, Sir Minstrel — there you have it — ah!  
Fal-lal — the very thing — the tune's ' Green Sleeves

#### THE MINSTREL SINGS.

The little bird sat on the greenwood tree,  
And the sun was as bright as bright could be;  
The leaf was broad, the shade was deep,  
The Lion of Flanders lay fast asleep.

The little bird sang, ' Sir Lion arise,  
For I hear with my ears and I see with my eyes;  
And I know what I know, and I tell thee this,  
That the men of Ghent have done something amiss.'

From his lair the Lion of Flanders rose,  
And he shook his mane and tossed up his nose;  
' Ere a leaf be fallen, or summer be spent,'  
Quoth he, ' if God spare me, I' ll go to Ghent.

' For a little bird sang, and I dreamed beside,  
That the people of Ghent were puffed up with pride,  
And I had been far over hill and dale,  
And was fast asleep, and they trod on my tail.'

Ere a leaf was fallen the Lion he went,  
And growled a growl at the gates of Ghent;  
But they bended low when they saw him awake,  
And said that they trod on his tail by mistake.

The little bird sat on the bush so bare,  
And the leaf fell brown on the Lion's lair;  
The little bird picked a berry so red,  
And dropt it down on the Lion's head.

' Sir Lion awake, and put out your claws,  
And lift your chin from your tawny paws;  
My ears are smaller than yours, but more  
I hear than you, and worse than before.'

The Lion stirred and awoke with a snort,  
And swelled with rage till his breath came short;  
' Ere the brown leaf meet with the flake of snow  
On the roundabout stair, to Ghent I'll go.

' For a little bird sang, and I dreamed as well,  
That the people of Ghent were as false as hell;  
Coming by stealth when nought I feared,  
They trod on my corns and pulled my beard.'

Ere a snow-flake fell the Lion he went,  
And roared a roar at the gates of Ghent;  
The gates they shook, though they were fast barred,  
And the warders heard it at Oudenarde.

At the first roar ten thousand men  
Fell sick to death — he roared again,  
And the blood of twenty thousand flowed  
On the bridge of Roone, as broad as the road.

Wo worth thee, Ghent! if having heard  
The first and second, thou bidest the third.  
Flat stones and awry, grass, potsherd, and shard,  
Thy place shall be like an old churchyard.

EARL.

A singular good song, and daintily accompanied with the music. Give him three florins, and a denier for the lad withal.

VAN HOLST.

Your highness is too bountiful. He made it not himself. 'T was your highness's serjeant minstrel that made it. The making and mending of it together was seven days and nights, bating twelve hours for sleeping, and four hours for eating, and five minutes for saying his prayers. Drinking never stopped him, for still the more he drank, the more he made of it. And he ranted and sang an' it like your highness, that it would have pleased you to hear him; for being that the song was made in honor of your highness, he said he could sing it a thousand times over, and think better of it every time.

EARL.

It is good poesy — marry and good prophecy too. Hark ye, master Mayor; I have some whit repented me that I was wrought upon by those old Knights of Ghent to proffer terms of such easy acquittance.

MAYOR.

When your highness is graciously pleased to give away your advantages, it is not for such as I to say you do wrong; but every man in Bruges, that is well affected to your highness, said that three hundred heads was too little.

EARL.

By my faith they said true; and Gilbert Matthew told me no less; but I was persuaded by the old Knights. I was too easy with them. Where is Gilbert Matthew?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Here, my lord.

EARL.

Come hither, Gilbert. I have bethought me, Gilbert, I almost sinned against true chivalry  
To let yon rabble off.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Your highness says it.

EARL.

Thou 'dst tell me 't was not by thy counsel, — well.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

As many heads of each insurgent craft  
Would not have been denied. A hundred nailed  
Like weasels to the gates of each walled town  
Thorough the states of Flanders — that had been  
A warning, wholesome and significant  
To the good towns.

EARL.

A salutary caution.

I would the bargain were to make again.  
Why, so now! who comes here? the good Sir Walter.

*Enter* SIR WALTER D'ARLON.

D'Arlon, I never see thee but with joy.  
What new adventure hast thou been upon?  
We miss thee oft at court, but thy return  
Is ever with new honors at thy heels.  
What captives follow thee to Bruges to-night?  
Or hast thou turned base metal into gold,  
And bring'st their ransoms? — either way is well.

D'ARLON.

My lord, I come alone.

EARL.

Why, still thou'rt welcome.

D'ARLON.

Yet there is something following at my heels,  
Which hardly shall your highness in like sort  
Make welcome here.

EARL.

Why, say'st thou? what is that?

D'ARLON.

Ill rumors, my good lord.

EARL.

And of what import?

D'ARLON.

The rebels are alive again and fresh.  
The messengers of peace lie stabbed to death  
Upon the steps i' the market-place.

EARL.

Not so!

It cannot be, — D'Arlon, it must be false.

D'ARLON.

I fear, my lord, it will not so be found.

EARL.

Nay, nay — so stripped of every thing — so bare  
As we had made them — scarce a leader left,  
And those that were, so all unskilful too!

D'ARLON.

That were an ugly breach if not repaired.  
They've made young Artevelde their chief.

EARL.

God help them!

A man that as much knowledge has of war  
As I of brewing mead! God help their souls!  
A bookish nursling of the monks — a meacock!

D'ARLON.

My lord, I'm fearful you mistake the man.  
If my accounts be true, the life he's led  
Served rather in its transit to eclipse  
Than to show forth his nature; and, that passed,  
You'll now behold him as he truly is,  
One of a cold and of a constant mind,  
Not quickened into ardent action soon,  
Nor prompt for petty enterprise; yet bold,  
Fierce when need is, and capable of all things.

EARL.

And hath he slain the knights?

D'ARLON.

With his own hand.

EARL.

I tell thee it is false ; it cannot be.  
Thou, Gilbert Matthew, how think'st thou o' the tale?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

My lord, it may be there's some stir at Ghent,  
Which rumor, floating like a mist before,  
Augments to this.

EARL.

Thou deem'st it to be nothing.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

I deem of Ghent as of a fly in winter,  
That in a gleam of sunshine creeping forth  
Kicks with stiff legs a feeble stroke or two,  
And falls upon its back. My lord, 't is nothing.

EARL.

Gilbert, thy wisdom never was at fault.  
Thou art a comfortable counsellor.  
Sirrah, what tidings?

(*To an ATTENDANT who enters.*)

ATTENDANT.

Sir, the Lord of Occo  
Came with his men at arms before the walls.  
Finding that he was driven forth of Ghent  
The warders have admitted him, and here  
He waits your pleasure.

EARL.

Bid him in at once.

He comes like confirmation. Oh Ghent! Ghent!  
Oh ye ungracious people!

*Enter the LORD OF OCCO.*

Speak, Sir Guy.

Out with the worst, for I have guessed it all.  
Fame was here first, as breathless as you are.

occo.

'T is the worst fortune ever yet befel me  
To be the bearer of this heavy news.  
Our friends are slain, the White-Hoods hold the town,  
And he, the homicide whose bloody hand  
Despatched the peaceful knights, is lord of all.

EARL.

Oh that unhappy people! hear me, God!  
Hear me, ye host of heaven, and all good men!  
If e'er I lift the wine-cup to my lips,  
If ever other than a soldier's bed  
Contain me, or if any pleasant sport  
Inveigle off my heart while that town stands,  
May I be driven from my royalties  
To dwell with beasts like him that sinned of old!  
Rise, Sirs, and feast no more. My Lord of Occo,  
Such entertainment as such times afford  
We'll give you. Bid my chamberlain see to it.  
Adieu, Sirs; when the walls of Ghent lie flat  
Our revel we resume.



D'ARLON.

Leave *me*, my lord,  
 The entertainment of your friends from Ghent.  
 My house will hold them. — (*aside.*) Grant me this, my  
 lord ;  
 They need a supervisor.

EARL.

Good ; — Sir Guy,  
 Sir Walter D'Arlon is your host at Bruges.  
 Adieu, Sirs ; come to council in the morning  
 You that are of it. Stand aside, Sir Minstrel —  
 What, are you blind ? Good night, good night, adieu.  
 [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.

A CHAMBER IN THE LORD OF ARLON'S HOUSE.

ADRIANA VAN MERESTYN, *and three* ATTENDANTS *in*  
*the* LORD OF OCCO'S *livery.*

ADRIANA.

Where have ye brought me to ? What house is this ?  
 Nay, must I ask for ever ? Wilt not speak ?  
 Nor thou, nor thou ? If ye are bid be dumb  
 But say ye are so, and I'll ask no more.

FIRST ATTENDANT.

Madam, we are.

ADRIANA.

Who bid you? — Not a word?  
 If you're afraid to tell me, make a sign.  
 Was it the Lord of Occo?

(*First Attendant shakes his head.*)

'T was not he?

Then whosoe'er enjoined it, send him here;  
 Entreat him were it but a moment's space  
 To come to me. He that hath tied your tongues  
 May loose them, or may hold his own unfettered.  
 I pray thee send him; thou art not so rude,  
 To guess thee by thy mien, as this so slight  
 So slender service to deny me — no —  
 Or else thou wear'st a mask.

(*The first Attendant goes out. She turns aside  
 from the others.*)

Befriend me now,  
 Ye powers of nature, that us women weak  
 Arm with persuasion, with which charmed weapon  
 We oft disarm the strong.

*Enter VAN AESWYN.*

VAN AESWYN (*to the Attendants*).

Depart the chamber.

[*Exeunt the Attendants.*]

ADRIANA.

Master Van Aeswyn!

VAN AESWYN.

Madam!

ADRIANA.

It is thou  
That thus abusest me!

VAN AESWYN.

I, Madam! No.  
I have done nothing; if a wrong there be,  
It lies with others; I have but obeyed  
Whom I am bound to serve.

ADRIANA.

Alas! thy guilt  
Is but more abject, being ministrant  
Unto another's, and thyself no less  
Accountable to heaven. His lust and greed  
Whom thou abettest, thou dost make thine own,  
And nothing gett'st but wages of thy service  
To pay thy sin. What! is't not shame on shame!  
Thou puttest thine immortal soul to sale  
For profit of another, thy reward  
Being the sorry guerdon of a squire,  
With blot and stain of such addition vile  
Of countenance and favor, bred of guilt,  
As he that uses thee may please to show thee;  
Favor, that coming from so soiled a source,  
And for such soil of service, if well weighed,  
Less of reward than punishment should taste,  
And less of honorable show should wear,  
Than show of reprehension. Thou to stamp  
A gentle name with stigma of such deeds!  
Oh curse of bad men's hire!

VAN AESWYN.

Nay, Madam, nay ;  
 not for hire, neither for countenance :  
 I have taken service with this lord,  
 by the law of arms —

ADRIANA.

What law is that ?  
 not the law of God, nor yet above it.

VAN AESWYN.

honest squire is bound by plighted faith,  
 by the law of arms, to execute  
 lord's behests.

ADRIANA.

Though they be base and foul ?  
 Sin ! what thread or filament so fine  
 casual consent, of compact void,  
 t in betwixt ' God save you ' and ' good morrow,'  
 t 's not a warrant of authority  
 bind a man to thee ! to thee, glib Sin !  
 Virtue ! where is that indissolute chain  
 ich to thy anchored mandaments eterne  
 floating soul shall grapple ! Law of arms !  
 at 't were that law supernal it is not,  
 dost thou break it : for all wrongs to women  
 ad in its code denounced.

VAN AESWYN.

By all that 's just  
 deed misliked me from the first ; three times  
 ayed his *lordship* to bethink himself

What quittance he should hazard, and what blame,  
 In wronging of so rich and good a lady ;  
 But still he said the Earl should bring him through  
 Let come what might ; insisting that by law  
 You were in wardship, and His Grace might grant  
 Your hand to whom was fittest.

ADRIANA.

Oh blind craft !

Oh frail inventions of humanity !  
 Me shall no earthly prince nor potentate  
 Toss like a morsel of his broken meat  
 To any supplicant. Be they avised  
 I am in wardship to the King of kings ;  
 God and my heart alone dispose of me.

VAN AESWYN.

Madam, I would it were so.

ADRIANA.

Say, besides,  
 The Earl should cast the mantle of his power  
 Over thy master, what shall cover thee,  
 Thou canst not borrow greatness for the cloak  
 Of evil deeds, from naked, manifest shame ?  
 Lo, here I stand in jeopardy and fear,  
 Weak, trembling, sick at heart, and wearied so  
 With perturbation, and with pain so racked,  
 That I have lost my patience, and for hours  
 Have prayed for God's deliverance through death ;  
 Yet rather would I, yea, far rather, live  
 A dateless life of anguish such as this ;  
 Rather live out my reason thus, and twist

For restless years upon a bed-rid couch,  
 With the sole sense of dotage and distress,  
 Than change with thee and take upon my soul  
 Thy forfeiture, and lodge within my breast  
 That worm of memory which to-day shall breed,  
 And which upon thy death-bed shall not die,  
 But being of the soul, shall be immortal!  
 Go—God forgive thee! for not mine the heart  
 That would invoke a curse.

VAN AESWYN.

Lady, I swear  
 I bore a part not willingly in this;  
 And could I, without ruin of my fortunes,  
 Do aught that should redeem it —

ADRIANA.

For thy fortunes  
 Trust them to me.

*Enter one of the ATTENDANTS.*

ATTENDANT.

My lord is at the gate,  
 And asks for you.

[*Exit.*]

ADRIANA.

I say, trust them to me;  
 Do to thyself the justice to renounce  
 This false knight's service, and to me one act  
 Of loyalty: seek out with instant haste  
 The Lord of Arlon; tell him I am here  
 In tribulation, and beseech his aid,

And bid him by the love he bears his lady,  
To grant it me with speed. Wilt thou do this ?

VAN AESWYN.

Madam, I will.

ADRIANA.

Go now then to thy lord,  
Lest he suspect thy tarrance. I, meanwhile,  
Will to the inner chamber make retreat,  
Where I shall watch and pray till shall be seen  
The issue of thine errand. Hark! they call thee.

[*Exeun*]

### SCENE III.

AN ANTE-CHAMBER IN THE EARL'S PALACE.

SIR WALTER D'ARLON *and* GILBERT MATTHEW.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

No sooner had his highness reached the palace  
Than he sends back for me.

D'ARLON.

And me the same.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

His highness is not happy.

D'ARLON.

That is likely,  
But have you any private cause to think it ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

I have observed that when he is not happy  
He sends for me.

D'ARLON.

And do you mend his mood ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Nay, what I can. His highness at such times  
Is wishful to be counselled to shed blood.

D'ARLON. •

'T is said that he is counselled oft to that.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

It is my duty to advise his highness,  
With neither fear nor favor. As I came,  
The bodies of three citizens lay stretched  
Upon the causeway.

D'ARLON.

How had they been killed ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

By knocking on the head.

D'ARLON.

And who had done it ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

The officers that walked before the Earl  
To make him room to pass. The streets were full,  
And many of the mean-crafts roamed about  
Discoursing of the news they heard from Ghent ;  
And as his highness passed they misbehaved,  
And three were knocked upon the head with staves.



I knew by that his highness was not happy.  
I knew I should be sent for.

*Enter an USHER from an inner chamber.*

USHER.

Ho! Master Gilbert Matthew to his highness.

*(Re-enters the chamber, followed by GILBERT MATTHEW.)*

D'ARLON.

There 's some men of their bloody counsels boast,  
As though the heart were difficult to harden.

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

ATTENDANT.

My lord, a gentleman has come in haste  
To seek you. I informed him you were here  
In waiting on his highness, but he still  
Insisted you would see him, did you know  
The matter and its urgency.

D'ARLON.

His name?

ATTENDANT.

Van Aeswyn.

D'ARLON.

What! Sir Guy of Occo's squire?

ATTENDANT.

The same, my lord.

D'ARLON.

Yes, yes, the man I know,  
But not the matter that he hath with me.  
Unless it be some difference with my steward  
About his quarters.

ATTENDANT.

Something else than that.

*Re-enter the USHER.*

USHER.

The Lord of Arlon to his highness.

D'ARLON.

Well ;  
Say to Van Aeswyn, when I leave the Earl  
I'll see him.

*[Exeunt.]*

---

**SCENE V.**

A CHAMBER IN THE EARL'S PALACE.

*The EARL and GILBERT MATTHEW.*

EARL.

And thus, if all that we have heard be true,  
Last night's ill news this morning somewhat betters.  
There's reason to surmise these granaries  
Were not destroyed by chance, and the same hand  
Which did us this good service may do more.

Meantime we 'll pray Duke Aubert and the Bishop  
To let no victual pass their lands to Ghent.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

You shall do well, my lord. I know that people.  
No poison works so wastingly amongst them  
As a low diet — yea, it brings them down.  
There 'll be a hundred thousand mouths in Ghent  
Gaping like callow jackdaws. Ah! I know them.  
The men of battle are full feeders all;  
By the strong hand they live, and help themselves  
With griping of the rest. When famine comes  
'T is worse to those, seeing that theretofore  
They were too gross of body, worse to these,  
For they were pinched already.

EARL.

'That is true.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Yea, Sir, I know the White-Hoods. Wait awhile,  
And when they feel the vulture in their gut  
They shall be busy whetting of their beaks.  
Wait till they hunger, and not two in Ghent  
Shall be of one opinion.

EARL.

In God's time

Distress shall breed dissensions as thou say'st.  
We 'll trust to that, and therefore have great heed  
To block them out from access of provision.  
The country is well wasted thereabouts,  
And what they get must travel far to reach them.  
We must shut up the roads from Liege and Brabant.

*Enter* THE LORD OF ARLON.

D'ARLON.

My lord, I do beseech you make me quit  
Of Occo for my guest, and give us leave  
For instant combat.

EARL.

Walter, art thou mad?  
What is thy quarrel with the Lord of Occo?  
He is since yesterday, with thy good leave,  
Our very worthy friend.

D'ARLON.

My lord, my lord,  
He is since yesterday, if not before,  
The very lewdest villain that was e'er  
A stain to knighthood.

EARL.

Say'st thou so? — go to;  
What are thy reasons?

D'ARLON.

With a violent hand  
He carried off from Ghent a noble lady,  
Whose honor he attempted yesternight  
Beneath my roof: and here on her behalf,  
And on my own, your highness I entreat  
That you give order to have lists prepared,  
Where I may meet the miscreant spear to spear,  
And do God's will upon him.

EARL.

Soft, my son ;  
 I'll have no fighting for a private cause  
 Till Ghent be down. I cannot spare a spear,  
 And this were but an idle cause at best  
 For breaking one. The honest dames of Ghent  
 Have scarce deserved protection at our hands ;  
 And when the time shall come, as come it will,  
 That Ghent is stormed and sacked, they'll have no  
     more  
 Than their deserts : free quarters shall they give  
 To lusty knight, hot squire, and man at arms.  
 Shall they not, Gilbert ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Sir, the dames of Ghent  
 Must look for worse than what your highness hints.

EARL.

Why then my Lord of Occo sinned not much  
 To seize occasion by the forelock, — ha ?

GILBERT MATTHEW.

My lord, he did but what was just and right.

D'ARLON.

Peace, master Gilbert Matthew — stand apart ;  
 I seek an audience direct and free,  
 No craft of juggling renegade betwixt  
 To interpose, and toss me to and fro  
 The words that please him or that please him not.  
 My lord, you know what service I have done,  
 And with what voluntary heart, not bound

By duty or allegiance to bear arms,  
For in my native land the while was peace.  
I scarce am called a man, and service yet  
I count by years, nor leave a winter out.  
I was the nursling of your camp, my lord,  
And played with weapons ere my hands had strength  
To lift an iron basnet to my head.  
The war-horse neighed to see me when my legs  
His breadth of back bestrid scarce aslope,  
And rarely hath it been from that time forth  
That I have housed when men at arms were mounted.  
This it befits me not to say, my lord,  
Save for the just conclusion : I entreat  
That if it square not with your purposes  
To grant the combat which I claim with Occo,  
I then have leave to fold my banner up,  
And quit your camp.

EARL.

Come, Walter, come, you're foolish ;  
When cause and opportunity are rife  
For reasonable fighting, we might well  
Dispense with all knight-errantry. Go to ;  
See the moon out, and if thy humor hold  
It shall have way ; the next that shines, I trust,  
Shall cast upon the battered walls of Ghent  
A thorough light.

D'ARLON.

And if I live to see it  
I'll claim the combat. Fare you well, my lord.

[Exit.]

EARL.

Was ever man, with denizens for foes  
 And foreigners for friends, so plagued as I!  
 My bravest knight would cast away his life  
 To do me a disservice, with more zeal  
 Than he was used to serve me with: denied,  
 Straight he shall tell me he was born elsewhere  
 And owes me no allegiance.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

By your leave,  
 I could not wish your highness better fortune,  
 Than that the fools you count amongst your friends  
 Were numbered with your foes, — or with the dead.

*Enter ATTENDANT.*

ATTENDANT.

According to the summons, please your highness,  
 The lords are met in council.

EARL.

I shall come.  
 Attend me, Gilbert, when the board breaks up  
 And thou shalt know the issue. Come to dinner.  
 And sirrah, tell the butler that to-day  
 I shall drink brandy. From all use of wine  
 I'm interdicted by a sacred vow,  
 Till Ghent's submission free me. May't be soon!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.

GHENT.

*The platform at the top of the steeple of St. Nicholas' church. Time, day-break.*

ARTEVELDE (*alone*).

There lies a sleeping city. God of dreams!  
What an unreal and fantastic world  
Is going on below!  
Within the sweep of yon encircling wall,  
How many a large creation of the night,  
Wide wilderness and mountain, rock and sea,  
Peopled with busy transitory groups,  
Finds room to rise, and never feels the crowd!  
— If when the shows had left the dreamers' eyes  
They should float upward visibly to mine,  
How thick with apparitions were that void!  
But now the blank and blind profundity  
Turns my brain giddy with a sick aversion.  
— I have not slept. I am to blame for that.  
Long vigils, joined with scant and meagre food,  
Must needs impair that promptitude of mind,  
And cheerfulness of spirit, which, in him  
Who leads a multitude, is past all price.



I think I could redeem an hour's repose  
 Out of the night that I have squandered, yet.  
 The breezes, launched upon their early voyage,  
 Play with a pleasing freshness on my face.  
 I will enfold my cloak about my limbs  
 And lie where I shall front them ; — here, I think.

*(He lies down.)*

If this were over — blessed be the calm  
 That comes to me at last ! A friend in need  
 Is nature to us, that when all is spent,  
 Brings slumber — bountifully — whereupon  
 We give her sleepy welcome — if all this  
 Were honorably over — Adriana —

*(Falls asleep, but starts up almost instantly.)*

I heard a hoof, a horse's hoof I'll swear,  
 Upon the road from Bruges, — or did I dream ?  
 No ! 't is the gallop of a horse at speed.

VAN DEN BOSCH *(without)*.

What ho ! Van Artevelde !

ARTEVELDE.

Who calls ?

VAN DEN BOSCH *(entering)*.

'T is I.

Thou art an early riser, like myself ;  
 Or is it thou hast not been to bed ?

ARTEVELDE.

What are thy tidings ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Nay, what can they be ?

A page from pestilence and famine's day-book ;  
 So many to the pest-house carried in,  
 So many to the dead-house carried out.  
 The same dull, dismal, damnable old story.

ARTEVELDE.

Be quiet ; listen to the westerly wind,  
 And tell me if it bring thee nothing new.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Nought to my ear, save howl of hungry dog  
 That hears the house is stirring — nothing else.

ARTEVELDE.

No, — now — I hear it not myself — no — nothing.  
 The city's hum is up — but ere you came  
 'T was audible enough.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

In God's name, what ?

ARTEVELDE.

A horseman's tramp upon the road from Bruges.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Why then be certain, 't is a flag of truce !  
 If once he reach the city we are lost.  
 Nay, if he be but seen, our danger 's great.  
 What terms so bad they would not swallow now ?  
 Let 's send some trusty varlets forth at once  
 To cross his way.

ARTEVELDE.

And send him back to Bruges ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Send him to hell — and that 's a better place.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, softly, Van den Bosch; let war be war,  
But let us keep its ordinances.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Tush!

I say, but let them see him from afar,  
And in an hour shall we, bound hand and foot,  
Be on our way to Bruges.

ARTEVELDE.

Not so, not so.

My rule of governance has not been such  
As e'er to issue in so foul a close.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

What matter by what rule thou may'st have governed?  
Think'st thou a hundred thousand citizens  
Shall stay the fury of their empty maws  
Because thou 'st ruled them justly?

ARTEVELDE.

It may be

That such a hope is mine.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Then thou art mad,  
And I must take this matter on myself.

*(Is going.)*

ARTEVELDE.

Hold, Van den Bosch; I say this shall not be.  
I must be madder than I think I am  
Ere I shall yield up my authority,  
Which I abuse not, to be used by thee.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

This comes of lifting dreamers into power.  
 I tell thee, in this strait and stress of famine,  
 The people, but to pave the way for peace,  
 Would instantly despatch our heads to Bruges.  
 Once and again I warn thee that thy life  
 Hangs by a thread.

ARTEVELDE.

Why, know I not it does!  
 What hath it hung by else since Utas' eve?  
 Did I not by mine own advised choice  
 Place it in jeopardy for certain ends?  
 And what were these? To prop thy tottering state?  
 To float thee o'er a reef, and, that performed,  
 To cater for our joint security?  
 No verily; not such my high ambition.  
 I bent my thoughts on yonder city's weal;  
 I looked to give it victory and freedom;  
 And working to that end, by consequence  
 From one great peril did deliver thee —  
 Not for the love of thee or of thy life,  
 Which I regard not, but the city's service;  
 And if for that same service it seem good,  
 I will expose thy life to equal hazard.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Thou wilt?

ARTEVELDE.

I will.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Oh, Lord! to hear him speak,

What a most mighty emperor of puppets  
Is this that I have brought upon the board !  
But how if he that made it should unmake ?

## ARTEVELDE.

Unto His sovereignty who truly made me  
With infinite humility I bow !  
Both, both of us are puppets, Van den Bosch ;  
Part of the curious clock-work of this world,  
We scold, and squeak, and crack each other's crown  
And if by twitches moved from wires we see not,  
I were to toss thee from this steeple's top,  
I should be but the instrument — no more —  
The tool of that chastising Providence  
Which doth exalt the lowly, and abase  
The violent and proud : but let me hope  
Such is not mine appointed task to-day.  
Thou passest in the world for worldly-wise :  
Then seeing we must sink or swim together,  
What can it profit thee, in this extreme  
Of our distress, to wrangle with me thus  
For my supremacy and rule ? Thy fate,  
As of necessity bound up with mine,  
Must needs partake my cares : let that suffice  
To put thy pride to rest till better times.  
Contest — more reasonably wrong — a prize  
More precious than the ordering of a shipwreck.

## VAN DEN BOSCH.

Tush, tush, Van Artevelde ; thou talk'st and talk'st,  
And honest burghers think it wondrous fine.  
But thou might'st easilier with that tongue of thine

Persuade yon smoke to fly i' the face o' the wind,  
 Than talk away my wit and understanding.  
 I say yon herald shall not enter here.

ARTEVELDE.

I know, Sir, no man better, where my talk  
 Is serviceable singly, where it needs  
 To be by acts enforced. I say, beware,  
 And brave not mine authority too far.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Hast thou authority to take my life?  
 What is it else to let yon herald in  
 To bargain for our blood?

ARTEVELDE.

Thy life again!

Why what a very slave of life art thou!  
 Look round about on this once populous town;  
 Not one of these innumerable house-tops  
 But hides some spectral form of misery,  
 Some peevish, pining child and moaning mother,  
 Some aged man that in his dotage scolds  
 Not knowing why he hungers, some cold corpse  
 That lies unstraightened where the spirit left it.  
 Look round, and answer what thy life can be  
 To tell upon the balance of such scales.  
 I too would live — I have a love for life —  
 But rather than to live to charge my soul  
 With one hour's lengthening out of woes like these,  
 I'd leap this parapet with as free a bound  
 As e'er was school-boy's o'er a garden wall.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

I'd like to see thee do it.

ARTEVELDE.

I know thou wouldst;

But for the present be content to see  
My less precipitate descent; for lo!  
There comes the herald o'er the hill.

[*Exit.*

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Beshrew thee!

Thou shalt not have the start of me in this.

[*He follows, and the scene closes.*

## SCENE II.

THE HOUSE VAN ARTEVELDE.

URSEL, VAN RYK, and VAN MUCK.

URSEL.

He will be here for his breakfast anon.

VAN RYK.

And call you this his breakfast?

URSEL.

An ounce of horse-flesh and half an oaten cake. It is his only meal; and if I were to make it larger, he would ne'er look at it.

VAN MUCK.

Why we ourselves fare better.

VAN RYK.

I fare somewhat better, and for thee, thou wouldst make a famine when there was none. No more than this morsel of meat in four-and-twenty hours.

URSEL.

No more; and if he hath been abroad, I would lay an even wager that he shall bring home some little child, or some sick woman to share it with him.

VAN RYK.

It is wonderful how stout he 'is withal. Some men shall but bite their nails, and their belly's full.

VAN MUCK.

There is a difference in men. I might eat the four hoofs of an ox, and my stomach should droop you, look you, and flap you, look you, like an empty sail. Here he comes.

*Enter* VAN ARTEVELDE.

ARTEVELDE.

A herald, Sirs, is coming here from Bruges.  
To horse, Van Muck, to horse, with Swink and Kloos,  
And any other of thy readiest men,  
And bring him safely in. What ails thee, man?

VAN MUCK.

Sir, saving your displeasure, Swink and Kloos  
Against your express orders, and despite  
Of much I said myself, have eat their horses.



ARTEVELDE.

Thou sayest not so? God's vengeance on their  
stomachs!

Next horse they kill, my cook shall serve it up,  
And melt the shoes for sauce.

To horse thyself then, with what men are mounted,  
And see that no mishap befall the herald.

VAN MUCK.

Sir, at your pleasure.

ARTEVELDE.

And beware, Van Muck.

Some there may be of evil-minded men  
Who would do outrage to the city's honor,  
And harm the herald. Look thou keep him safe.

VAN MUCK.

Sir, safe he shall be, whosoe'er would harm him.

[Exit.

*CLARA enters, but remains behind.*

ARTEVELDE.

And now, Van Ryk, I have a charge for thee.  
Thou in the porch of Old St. Nicholas Church,  
Art to mount guard beside the postern-gate  
Which leads upon the stair that climbs the steeple.  
Betake thee thither, and until I come,  
Inward or outward let none pass the wicket.

*(Turning to Clara.)*

How fares my sister? nay — come hither, Clara.

CLARA.

No nearer, Philip, for I breathe contagion.

ARTEVELDE.

What, com'st thou from the hospital ?

CLARA.

Straight thence.

God help me for a pestilent little fool !  
I tend the sick from weary day to day,  
Though Heaven has set its face against a cure,  
And they that should have thanked me for my pains  
Will never more speak word.

ARTEVELDE.

Thou heed'st not that.

No, I am certain 't is for no man's thanks  
That thou hast toiled ; and let them live or die,  
Thou hast thine own reward.  
Much hast thou merited, my sister dear,  
Since these disastrous times have fallen upon us.  
In easier hours it may be I had cause,  
This time or that, to wish thy boldness less,  
Though trusting still that time, which tempers all,  
Would bring thee soberer thoughts and tame thy heart.  
What time to tardy consummation brings,  
Calamity, most like a frosty night  
That ripeneth the grain, completes at once.  
But now that we're alone, — not gone, Van Ryk ?

VAN RYK.

Sir, to speak freely, had it been your pleasure  
To put me to a service of more action,  
I had not shamed the choice ; for though I'm old, —

ARTEVELDE.

Tut, tut, Van Ryk ; 't will come, the time will come,

And action to thy heart's content thou 'lt have.  
But now begone.

VAN RYK.

Whate'er your bidding be,  
My poor endeavours shall be done toward it.

[Exit.

ARTEVELDE.

Now render me account of what befell,  
Where thou hast been to-day.

CLARA.

It is but little.

I paid a visit first to Ukenheim,  
The man who whilome saved our father's life,  
When certain Clementists and ribald folk  
Assailed him at Malines. He came last night,  
And said he knew not if we owed him aught,  
But if we did, a peck of oatmeal now  
Would pay the debt, and save more lives than one.  
I went. It seemed a wealthy man's abode;  
The costly drapery and good house-gear  
Had, in an ordinary time, betokened  
That with the occupant the world went well.  
By a low couch, curtained with cloth of frieze,  
Sat Ukenheim, a famine-stricken man,  
With either bony fist upon his knees,  
And his long back upright. His eyes were fixed  
And moved not, though some gentle words I spake:  
Until a little urchin of a child  
That called him father, crept to where he sat  
And plucked him by the sleeve, and with its small  
And skinny finger pointed: then he rose,

And with a low obeisance, and a smile  
That looked like watery moonlight on his face,  
So weak and pale a smile, he bade me welcome.  
I told him that a lading of wheat-flour  
Was on its way, whereat, to my surprise,  
His countenance fell, and he had almost wept.

ARTEVELDE.

Poor soul! and wherefore?

CLARA.

That I soon perceived.  
He plucked aside the curtain of the couch,  
And there two children's bodies lay composed.  
They seemed like twins of some ten years of age,  
And they had died so nearly both together  
He scarce could say which first: and being dead,  
He put them, for some fanciful affection,  
Each with its arm about the other's neck,  
So that a fairer sight I had not seen  
Than those two children, with their little faces  
So thin and wan, so calm, and sad, and sweet.  
I looked upon them long, and for awhile  
I wished myself their sister, and to lie  
With them in death as they did with each other;  
I thought that there was nothing in the world  
I could have loved so much; and then I wept;  
And when he saw I wept, his own tears fell,  
And he was sorely shaken and convulsed,  
Through weakness of his frame and his great grief.

ARTEVELDE.

It was a thousand pities he deferred  
So long to ask our aid.

CLARA.

It was indeed.

But whatsoe'er had been his former pride,  
 He seemed a humbled and heart-broken man.  
 He thanked me much for what I said was sent;  
 But I knew well his thanks were for my tears.  
 He looked again upon the children's couch,  
 And said, low down, they wanted nothing now.  
 So, to turn off his eyes,  
 I drew the small survivor of the three  
 Before him, and he snatched it up, and soon  
 Seemed quite forgetful and absorbed. With that  
 I stole away.

ARTEVELDE.

There is a man by fate  
 Fitted for any enterprise of danger.  
 Alas! of many such I have the choice.  
 Well; next thou passed'st to the hospital?

CLARA.

With Father John; but here he comes himself,  
 No doubt to bring you tidings of the sick.

*Enter* FATHER JOHN.

ARTEVELDE.

What cheer, good Father?

FATHER JOHN.

Heavy is my cheer;  
 What else but heavy, when from day to day  
 I see still more of suffering sinking men  
 Pass to the choked church-yard.

ARTEVELDE.

Truly the sight  
 Must needs bring on a heaviness of cheer.  
 I am to blame to think of that no sooner.  
 Who waits? Too many things conspire — who waits?

*Enter* STEWARD.

Repair thee to the captains of the guards,  
 And give my orders that from this time forth  
 No funerals be allowed till after dark.

[*Exit* STEWARD.]

And so the sickness spreads?

FATHER JOHN.

It spreads apace.  
 Since Egypt's plagues did never rage disease  
 So sore, and so invincible by art ;  
 So varied in its forms and in its signs,  
 So unintelligibly strange : in some  
 The fever keeps its course from first to last ;  
 In others intermits : here suddenly  
 The patient's head is seized with racking pains ;  
 Then shift they to his chest, with change as quick,  
 Then to his loins, and strangury succeeds,  
 With clammy sweat, hard breathing, and hot thirst.  
 The intervals of pain, if such there be,  
 Afford him no repose, but he is still  
 Dejected, restless, of a hopeless mind,  
 Indifferent to all incidents and objects,  
 Or in his understanding too confused  
 To see or apprehend them : first the face  
 Is red and flushed, with large and fiery eyes ;

Then is it dropsical, and deathly pale.  
 Sometimes such shudderings seize upon the frame  
 That the bed shakes beneath it, and with that  
 The breath is checked with sobbings as from cold.  
 Then comes a thick dark crust upon the lips,  
 And tongue, and teeth; the fatal hiccough next.  
 Some die in struggles and strong agonies;  
 Some in a lethargy; whilst others wake  
 As from a dream, shake off the fit, look round,  
 And with collected senses and calm speech  
 Tell the by-standers that their hour is come.

ARTEVELDE.

It is a dismal malady, and this,  
 Like all our thousand miseries beside,  
 Demands a remedy that kills or cures.  
 What wild beasts' yells are these?

*(Tumult and shouting without. The PAGE enters.)*

Henry; what news?

PAGE.

The man from Bruges, escorted by Van Muck,  
 Is coming here with crowds of people, wild  
 To hear what message he may bring. Van Muck  
 Forbids that any word should pass his lips  
 Till he have speech of you.

ARTEVELDE.

Van Muck is right.

PAGE.

But oh! you never saw such wrathful men!  
 They'll tear them both to pieces.

ARTEVELDE.

Have no fear.

Van Muck will make his way. — Aye, here they come.

PAGE.

The man has entered by the other door ;  
I see him not amongst them.

CLARA.

He is here.

*Enter VAN MUCK and VAN AESWYN.*

ARTEVELDE.

What ! this the messenger ? now by the rood !  
Either mine eyes are treacherous as himself,  
Or else I see a follower of that false  
Dishonored knight, and perjured knave, Van Occo.  
How is it, if he dares to send thee here  
That thou hast dared to come ?

AESWYN.

Under your favor

The Lord of Occo, Sir —

ARTEVELDE.

I'm bound by oath,  
If I survive this hapless city's siege,  
That instant to pursue the traitorous villain  
By day and night, o'er mountain and o'er plain ;  
Through solitudes or cities, land or sea,  
Though he should fly me to the ends o' the earth,  
And never cease from seeking and pursuing,  
Till I shall set my heel upon his neck.  
What dost thou here ?



AESWYN.

I come not here from him,  
 For since he made his war upon a damsel,  
 I have renounced his service; more than that,  
 I to the Lord of Arlon did that errand  
 Which wrought to her deliverance.

ARTEVELDE.

Aha!

I crave your pardon. I had heard 't was you,  
 Though it escaped me. Tell your tale; but first  
 What tidings of that lady?

AESWYN.

She remains  
 By her own will, Sir, in the knightly hands  
 Of my good Lord of Arlon.

ARTEVELDE.

Say no more;  
 Elsewhere I would not wish her.

*(The tumult increases without, and Artevelde's  
 name is called repeatedly.)*

Let me now  
 Dismiss this noisy and impatient herd  
 That throng my doors, and then — ho! hark ye, stew-  
 ard,  
 Conduct Van Aeswyn to my private chamber.

*[Exeunt all but ARTEVELDE and CLARA.]*

My Clara, we have here a busy day;  
 Perhaps I shall not see thee, love, again

Till after nightfall; but I will not lose  
Thy good-night kiss, so give it to me now.

*(She looks in his face for a moment doubtfully, then falls upon his neck, kisses, and quits him. In the mean time the clamor without increases. Artevelde passes into an external gallery, which overlooks the street, and is heard addressing the people.)*

ARTEVELDE.

Hence to the Stadt-House, friends; I'll meet you there,  
And either bring the messenger himself,  
Or tell you of his tidings: hence — begone.

*(The noise subsides as the people disperse; Artevelde passes over the stage; and the scene closes.)*

---

### SCENE III.

BEFORE THE STADT-HOUSE, AS IN THE LAST SCENE  
OF THE SECOND ACT.

*The people assemble. FRANS ACKERMAN and PETER  
VAN NUITRE in front.*

ACKERMAN.

'T is certain something hath befallen him.

VAN NUITRE.

But where? He might be found, if so it were.

ACKERMAN.

Hast sought him at Jozyne's estaminet?

VAN NUITRE.

There, and at every lodgment in the city.  
Old mother Van den Bosch was confident  
He went forth early to Van Artevelde's.

ACKERMAN.

Sure nothing can have happened to him there.

VAN NUITRE.

That 's what I doubt. The best will have their failings  
They were not in such unison of mind  
As might have been desired.

ACKERMAN.

I cannot think it.  
But this day's business shall proceed no farther  
Until the truth appear. Soft, now he comes.

*(VAN ARTEVELDE enters. There is a dead silence  
He walks slowly, and with a mournful appearance  
up the steps of the platform.)*

ARTEVELDE.

Are we all here?

ONE FROM THE CROWD.

What 's left of us is here, —  
Our bones.

ARTEVELDE.

We 're wasted in the flesh, 't is true  
But we have spirits left. We all are here.

ACKERMAN.

I will say nay to that. Where 's Van den Bosc

ARTEVELDE.

Silence ! Frans Ackerman ; we want not him.

ACKERMAN.

Then I demand if he be dead or living.

ARTEVELDE.

He lives.

ACKERMAN.

Where is he, then ?

ARTEVELDE.

Where all shall be,  
Who seek, by mutiny against their chief,  
To do unlawful deeds. What ask ye more ?  
He is arrested, and confined.

ACKERMAN.

What cause  
For this proceeding hath that brave man given ?

ARTEVELDE.

If, as his friend, thou ask wherein he erred,  
I'll tell it to this people and to thee, —  
Not, mark you me, as rendering account,  
For that were needless, — but of free good-will.  
Sirs, Van den Bosch insisted, in despite  
Of all dissuasion, all authority,  
The messenger from Bruges should be waylaid  
And put to death — yea, nothing less would serve, —  
That so the tidings which I 'm here to tell  
Might never reach your ears. To place restraint  
Upon this obstinate humor, and give scope

To your deliberations, for awhile  
He is in duress. Are ye well content ?

MANY VOICES.

Content, content. The tidings, what are they ?

ARTEVELDE.

Frans Ackerman, thou hear'st what cause constrained  
Me, much reluctant, thus to use thy friend.  
Art thou content ?

ACKERMAN.

I am.

ARTEVELDE.

So far is well.

And we set forth unanimous, to end  
I trust no otherwise. Fair Sirs of Ghent !  
Van Aeswyn, the ambassador from Bruges,  
Comes with credentials from the Earl, to show  
What mind he bears toward you. Bitterer words  
Did never Christian man to Christians send.  
But we are fallen, my friends, and vain it were  
For us to quarrel with the proud man's scorn.  
Then to the matter take ye heed alone,  
And trouble not your hearts for aught beside.  
He will admit you to no terms but these, —  
That every man and woman born in Ghent  
Shall meet him on the road, half way to Bruges,  
Bare-footed, and bare-headed, in their shirts,  
With halters on their necks, and there kneel down,  
And place their lives and chattels at his mercy.  
This if ye do not now, he's sworn an oath  
That he will never hearken to you more,

But famine shall consume you utterly,  
 And in your desolate town he'll light a flame  
 That shall not be extinguished. Speak your minds.  
 Will ye accept the proffered terms, or no ?

## BURGHERS.

Give us your counsel. Tell us what is best.

## ARTEVELDE.

What can I say ? You know that as you are  
 You cannot live. Death opens every door,  
 And sits in every chamber by himself.  
 If what might feed a sparrow should suffice  
 For soldiers' meals, ye have not wherewithal  
 To linger out three days. For corn, there's none ;  
 A mouse imprisoned in your granaries  
 Were starved to death. And what then should I say ?  
 Why truly this : that whatsoe'er men's plight  
 There is a better and a worser way,  
 If their discretion be not overthrown  
 By force of their calamities. Three things  
 Ye have to choose of. You may take his terms,  
 And go with halters round your necks to Loo.  
 You will be then his servants and his wealth,  
 The laborers of his vineyard ; and I deem,  
 Although a haughty lord he be, and cruel,  
 That he will have the sense to spare his own,  
 When vengeance hath been fed. I say, I deem  
 That when the blood of those that led you on,  
 And of their foremost followers hath flowed,  
 He will be satiate and stay his hand.  
 If this to try be your deliberate choice,

I will not say that ye be ill-advised.

How are ye minded? Let your Deacons speak.

*(The people speak in consultation with each other, and with the DEACONS.*

DEACON OF THE MARINERS.

We of the mariners' craft approve the counsel.

DEACON OF THE CORDWAINERS.

There's nothing better can be done.

DEACON OF THE FULLERS.

Agreed.

Our craft was never forward in the war.

DEACON OF THE WEAVERS.

But, master Philip, said you not three ways

There were to choose of? Tell us what remains.

ARTEVELDE.

You may have patience and expect the close.

If nothing else seem fit, betake yourselves

Unto your churches; at the altar's foot

Kneel down and pray, and make a Christian end,

And God will then have mercy on your souls.

This is the second way.

DEACON OF THE WEAVERS.

And what the third?

ARTEVELDE.

If there be found amongst you men whose blood

Runs not so chilly yet as thus to die,

Then there's this third way open — but not else.

That they whose plight is best and hearts are stout

Be mustered suddenly, equipped and armed ;  
 That with our little left of food and wine  
 The sumpter beasts be laden for their use ;  
 That then they follow me : to-morrow's eve  
 Shall find us knocking at the gates of Bruges,  
 And then 'we'd strike a stroke for life or death.  
 This is the third and sole remaining course.  
 Choose of the three.

MANY VOICES.

Choose for us, master Philip ;  
 You are more wise than we.

ARTEVELDE.

If by my choice  
 You will abide — a soldier's death for me !

A GREAT MANY VOICES.

To Bruges, to Bruges ; a venture forth to Bruges.

ARTEVELDE.

Why yet, then, in our embers there is life !  
 Let whosoe'er would follow me repair  
 To the West Port. Five thousand will I choose  
 From them that come, if there should be so many :  
 And when night falls, we'll sally from the gates.

MANY CITIZENS AGAIN.

For Bruges ! for Bruges ! 't is gallantly resolved.

ARTEVELDE.

Then fare ye well, ye citizens of Ghent !  
 This is the last time you will see me here,  
 Unless God prosper me past human hope.  
 I thank you for the dutiful demeanor  
 Which never once in any of you all



Have I found wanting, though severely tried  
 When discipline might seem without reward.  
 Fortune has not been kind to me, good friends;  
 But let not that deprive me of your loves,  
 Or of your good report. Be this the word;  
 My rule was brief, calamitous — but just.  
 No glory which a prosperous fortune gilds,  
 If shorn of this addition, could suffice  
 To lift my heart so high as it is now.  
 This is that joy in which my soul is strong,  
 That there is not a man amongst you all,  
 Who can reproach me that I used my power  
 To do him an injustice. If there be,  
 It is not to my knowledge; yet I pray him,  
 That he will now forgive me, taking note  
 That I had not to deal with easy times.

FIRST CITIZEN.

Oh, master Philip, there is none — not one.

SECOND CITIZEN.

Most justly and most wisely you have ruled us.

ARTEVELDE.

I thank you, Sirs; farewell to you once more.  
 Once more, farewell. If I return to Ghent,  
 A glory and dominion will be yours  
 Such as no city since the olden time  
 Hath been so bold to conquer or to claim.  
 If I return no more — God's will be done!  
 To Him and to His providence I leave you.

*(He descends. The people come round him, seiz-  
 his hands and crying confusedly, 'God b  
 you, master Philip! God be with you.')*

Nay, press not on me, friends; I see you weep,  
 Which ye did never for your past mischances.  
 But ye shall be disburthened of your griefs  
 The rather than disheartened by these tears;  
 Or else should I reprove them — so — farewell!

*(He passes through the crowd, which disperses, and the scene closes.)*

## SCENE IV.

THE VESTIBULE OF THE CHURCH OF ST. NICHOLAS.

*At the extreme end of it, VAN RYK is seen keeping guard over the door which gives access to the church tower. In front, CLARA appears, followed at a little distance by VAN AESWYN.*

CLARA.

Still he pursues me; but I will not bear it.  
 How now, Sir squire? whom seek you?

AESWYN.

With your leave  
 I have an errand for your private ear.

CLARA.

My private ear! I have no private ear;  
 My ears will not be private.

AESWYN.

I beseech you  
 To pardon my presumption.

CLARA.

Nay, go to :  
It is not past forgiveness ; no, no, no,  
I freely pardon you.

AESWYN.

I thank you, Madam ;  
And were I but permitted to speak out  
All that he bade me say —

CLARA.

That he ! what he ?

AESWYN.

The Lord of Arlon, Madam.

CLARA.

Lord of what ?

AESWYN.

Sir Walter, Lord of Arlon.

CLARA.

Oh ! Sir Walter, —  
Sir Walter D'Arlon — a good knight they say :  
He sent his service, did he ? — a good knight. —  
I knew him once — he came to Ghent — oh God !  
I'm sick — the air is hot, I think — so hot !  
I pray you pardon me — we get no rest  
In this beleaguered town — no any thing —  
This is the time of day I use to faint ;  
But I shall miss to do it for this once.  
So please you to proceed.

AESWYN.

There's here a bench ;  
 If you'll be seated: for you look so pale  
 I fear you're ill.

CLARA.

Oh, never mind the bench ;  
 No, I can stand — I think — well then, I'll sit  
 So now, your errand ?

AESWYN.

The Lord of Arlon, Madam,  
 Imparted to me that of all the griefs  
 That Fortune had allotted him, was none  
 So broke his spirit as the cruel thought  
 That you in some sort must partake the woe:  
 Of this so suffering city : he could ne'er  
 Lay lance in rest, or do a feat of arms,  
 But this reflection stung him to the heart,  
 And each success in which he might have triumphed  
 Was turned to bitterness, — seeming nought else  
 But injury to his love. Thus is he now  
 A man whose heart resents his handiwork,  
 And all his pleasure in the war is poisoned.

CLARA.

Alas, poor D' Arlon ! but I cannot help him !

AESWYN.

Himself thinks otherwise ; he bade me say  
 That he implores you to fly hence to him.

CLARA.

No, never, never.

AESWYN.

And his lady-aunt,  
The prioress, will have you in her care,  
Till it shall please you to permit his suit.

CLARA.

I tell thee, never. I a fugitive!  
Whilst Philip lives and holds the city out,  
Nor pestilence nor famine, fire nor sword,  
Nor evil here nor good elsewhere divides us.  
Much may he lose, and much that's far more worth,  
But never this reliance.

AESWYN.

With your leave,  
I would make bold to ask you if your absence,  
In these extremities, might not rejoice  
Rather than grieve your brother, who might see  
In your deliverance from such straits as these  
His own acquittance of a painful charge.

CLARA.

Oh no, Sir, you mistake: we two have grown  
From birth on my side, boyhood upon his,  
Inseparably together, as two grafts  
Out of the self-same stock; we've shared alike  
The sun and shower and all that Heaven hath sent us;  
I've loved him much and quarrelled with him oft,  
And all our loves and quarrels past are links  
That no adversity shall e'er dissever.  
And I am useful, too; he'll tell you that;  
We Arteveldes were made for times like these;  
The Deacon of the Mariners said well

That we are of such canvas as they use  
To make storm-stay-sails. I have much in charge,  
And I'll stand by him and abide the worst.

AESWYN.

Then I must tell Sir Walter that you never —

CLARA.

Alas, poor D'Arlon! did I then say 'never?'  
It is a most unkindly sounding word.  
Tell him to ask me when the siege is raised.  
But then he shall not need; he can come hither.  
But tell him — of your knowledge, not from me —  
The woman could not be of nature's making  
Whom, being kind, her misery made not kinder.

AESWYN.

The thought of that may soften him. Farewell.

CLARA.

Farewell. I mount the tower to look abroad.  
After your private conference at noon,  
My brother armed himself and bade his horse  
Be ready harnessed in his mail complete;  
And though you keep his secret, I surmise  
'There's something may be seen from this church tower.

AESWYN.

Nothing to come from Bruges.

CLARA.

But yet I'll look.

*(She approaches the door of the Tower, and perceives VAN RYK, who plants himself before her.)*

VAN RYK.

You cannot pass, my lady.

CLARA.

How! not pass?

VAN RYK.

The door is locked; your brother keeps the key:  
And I am stationed here with strict command  
To suffer none to pass.

CLARA.

How could they pass,  
If what thou say'st be true? thou hast the key.

VAN RYK.

Upon my faith I have it not, my lady.

CLARA.

A courteous usage for a lady this!  
But hither comes my little spy, the page,  
To tell what's doing in the market-place.

*Enter PAGE.*

PAGE.

Here is a brave adventure! here's a feat!  
Here is a glorious enterprise afoot!

CLARA.

What is it? tell us true.

PAGE.

Illustrious lady!  
The name of Artevelde shall live for ever!  
For master Philip leads five thousand men.  
This very night to storm the gates of Bruges.

CLARA.—

Thou dost not say it?

PAGE.

True as written book.

CLARA.

There's matter then for Flanders to discourse of,  
 There's cause for Ghent to tremble or rejoice,  
 And liberty for me: if Philip goes  
 I have no business here.

AESWYN.

Most surely none;  
 And you will now betake yourself to Bruges!

CLARA.

I'll go no further forth than others go;  
 Nor do I deem even that would be permitted,  
 Should it be known to Philip.

AESWYN.

Let it not.  
 You can pass out unnoticed in the press.  
 He'll have too much upon his mind to mark you.

CLARA.

Come hither, Henry; be a trusty page,  
 And help a lady at her need.

PAGE.

Who, I?

Yes, surely, always.

AESWYN.

Is not yon your brother  
 That hurries here?



CLARA.

Away, he must not see us.

[*Exeunt CLARA, VAN AESWYN, and PA*

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE, who advances to the door of tower where VAN RYK is stationed.*

ARTEVELDE.

How fares our friend within? set ope the door;  
For I must speak a word to him at once.

VAN RYK.

Oh, Sir! you must not enter; he is mad.  
I would not give a denier for the life  
Of any that should enter now; he's armed,  
And rages like a man possessed by devils.

ARTEVELDE.

Whence tak'st thou that conclusion?

VAN RYK.

For three hours  
He strove and shouted as though fifty fiends  
Were doing battle on the narfow stair:  
He flung his body with such desperate force  
Against the door, that I was much in doubt  
Whether the triple bars had strength to hold it.  
Then — God be merciful! the oaths and curses!  
Faster they came than I could tell my beads.

ARTEVELDE.

But all is silent now.

VAN RYK.

The last half-hour  
I have not heard him.

ARTEVELDE.

Open me the door.

VAN RYK.

Surely you will not enter ?

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, I must.

We must be friends again. His aid is wanted.

VAN RYK.

He will assault you ere a word be spoken.

ARTEVELDE.

He is a hasty man ; but we must meet.

VAN RYK.

Then I will enter with you.

ARTEVELDE.

By no means.

I seek his confidence ; a show of force

Were sure to baffle me. I go alone.

VAN RYK.

For mercy's sake forbear. Should you go in,

Or you or he will ne'er come out alive.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, nay, thou know'st not with what winning ways

I can sleek down his wrath. Stand fast below

I charge thee, and let no intrusive step

Trouble my conference with Van den Bosch.

*[Exit, and the scene changes.]*

## SCENE V.

THE PLATFORM AT THE TOP OF THE STEEPLE.

*As in the first scene in this act.*

VAN ARTEVELDE and VAN DEN BOSCH.

ARTEVELDE.

He has been drunk with anger, and he sleeps.  
 Lest he be not the soberer for his dose  
 I shall do well to strip him of his weapons.  
 Come, courtier, from thy house — come from thy case,  
 Thou smooth and shining dangler by the side  
 Of them that put thee to a deadly use :  
 Thou art dismissed. *(He lays aside the dagger.)*

And come thou likewise forth,  
 Thou flashing flourisher in the battle field ;  
 Gaudy and senseless tool of sovereignty,  
 Up to thy shoulders thou shalt reek in blood,  
 And 't is but wiping thee to make thee clean,  
 So poor a thing art thou! — there — get thee gone —  
*(He lays aside the sword.)*

Now that he's stingless I may stir him up.  
 Ho! Van den Bosch! arouse thee; what, thou sleep'st;  
 Why, here's a sluggard! — up, thou lubberly sot!  
 Get thee afoot! is this a time to sleep?  
 Up, ere I prod thee with my sword — up, slug!  
 Up, drowsy clod — why, now I think thou wak'st.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

What noisy villain's this? — Van Artevelde!

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, never grope and fumble for thy weapons ;  
They are conveyed away.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Oh ! bloody villain,  
And wilt thou murder me unarmed ?

ARTEVELDE.

Out ! out !  
More like to whip thee for thy fond conceit.  
I tell thee, man, a better friend than I  
Thou 'st not been blessed with for this many a year.  
When all is known to thee, thyself shalt say  
That a more friendly deed was never done thee  
Than this of mine — the shutting of thee up.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Philip of Artevelde, I say thou liest —  
Give me my sword again. I say thou liest —  
Give me my dagger and my sword — thou liest —  
Thou art a caitiff and a lying knave,  
And thou hast stolen my dagger and my sword.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, softly, friend.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

I 'm robbed, I 'm robbed, I 'm plundered —  
I 'm plundered of my weapons — of my sword.  
Give me my sword again, thou liar, thou !  
I 'm plundered of my dagger and my sword,  
Give me my sword, thou robber, or I 'll kill thee.

ARTEVELDE.

Do that, and thou shalt need thy sword no longer.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Thou coward, wilt thou give me back my sword ?

ARTEVELDE.

There — take it, and the devil give thee good on 't !  
Now that thou hast it, mayhap thou 'lt be brought  
To leave thy bellowing and listen. Hark !

VAN DEN BOSCH.

I have thee now, Van Artevelde, I have thee.  
Ha, ha, I have my sword — I have thee now.

ARTEVELDE.

And if thou had'st thy senses and thine ears  
It were a better having for the nonce.  
Wilt thou be still and listen to me ?

VAN DEN BOSCH.

No.

Thou art a liar. Draw thy sword and fight.

ARTEVELDE.

I give thee back thy lie, and take thy challenge.  
To mortal proof we 'll put it, if thou wilt,  
But not by instant combat. Three days hence  
I pledge my word to answer thy demand,  
And I will show thee reasons why no sooner.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

A murrain on thy reasons ! draw thy sword.

ARTEVELDE (*draws his sword and flings it from him*).

I 'll fight thee when I please, and not before.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Art thou a coward ? wherefore wilt not fight ?

ARTEVELDE.

There is a time for all things. Here I stand,  
Unarmed before thee, and I will be heard.  
That which so much thou tak'st to heart, was done  
Purely to save thy credit, much indeed  
Endangered by thy wilfulness and haste.  
I would have done myself no less offence  
To do thee so much service. Say thine arm  
Had cut me off the messenger from Bruges.  
Ghent hears the rumor — magnifies at once  
The untold terms to unconditional peace,  
And, mad with rage for comfort thus repelled,  
Had turned upon thee to thine overthrow.  
But listen what instead I've brought to pass :  
The terms were told, — such sanguinary terms  
As we had cause to look for ; on that ground,  
I moved the people to a last attempt  
Of desperate daring ; and we go to-night,  
Five thousand men, to seek the Earl at Bruges.  
Now, Peter Van den Bosch, give ear to me :  
Thy mouth has been, this many a day, stuffed full  
Of vengeance dire denounced against this Earl.  
The blood of Heins, of Launoy, and Van Ranst,  
(True friends of thine if truth and friendship be !)  
Sinks in the ground, nor honored nor avenged,  
Save by the mouthing of an idle threat.  
Dead men and living, vows after vows sent up  
In hot succession to the throne of Heaven,  
Deep ravage done amongst thy native fields,

Strange tortures suffered by thy countrymen,  
 Call thee with common voice to turn thy wrath  
 To just account ; — and is it come to this,  
 That for the matter of but one day's feud  
 With one tried friend that never did thee hurt,  
 Thou canst forget all else, and put thy cause  
 To imminent hazard at the utmost verge  
 Of all its fortunes and its ultimate hope !  
 If so, I cry thee mercy ; I mistook thee ;  
 For I had counted on thy aid to-day  
 To do the things that thou so oft hast threatened.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Van Artevelde, I never yet forgave  
 So deep an injury as thou hast done me ;  
 But seeing how things bear, I'll pass it by,  
 Until this last adventure have an end.  
 Then shalt thou reckon with me for the past.

ARTEVELDE.

For that I stand prepared. Meanwhile I pray thee,  
 Let needful harmony subsist between us ;  
 Nor let the common welfare feel this feud.  
 Take thou thy charge in this day's work ; come down  
 And I will give it thee. From me thou 'lt find  
 All fit observance.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

I will take my charge.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.

THE FIELD OF MERLE IN THE ENVIRONS OF BRUGES.

VAN ARTEVELDE, VAN DEN BOSCH, VAN RYK,  
VAN MUCK, *and others.*

ARTEVELDE.

Not a step farther ; give the word to halt,  
And send the wagons here ; we can't be better.  
God grant that hither they may come to seek us !  
Here is the fighting ground, and there the slough  
In which they needs must perish should they yield.  
We can't be better.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Let it then be here.

I've probed the slough.

ARTEVELDE.

That I did too ; 't is deep.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

He is a taller man than you or I,  
That finds the bottom with his head above.

ARTEVELDE.

It is an hour to sunset.

VAN RYK.

Nay, 't is more.



ARTEVELDE.

A little more, Van Ryk. I would to God  
The sun might not go down upon us here  
Without a battle fought!

VAN DEN BOSCH.

If so it should,  
We pass a perilous night.

ARTEVELDE.

A nipping night,  
And wake a wasted few the morrow morn.

VAN MUCK.

We have a supper left.

ARTEVELDE.

My lady's page  
If he got ne'er a better should be wroth,  
And burn in effigy my lady's steward.  
For us and for one supper 't will suffice;  
But he's a skilful man at splitting hairs  
That can make two on 't.

VAN RYK.

Aye, or leave behind  
A breakfast in his dish.

ARTEVELDE.

We break our fast  
Elsewhere to-morrow. I pray God the saint  
Whose feast they celebrate to-night at Bruges,  
May steep them well in wine. If Ukenheim  
Get undiscovered in, we shall not miss  
To profit by his skill.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

We'll hope the best ;  
 But if there be a knave in power unhang'd,  
 And in his head a grain of sense undrowned,  
 He'll be their caution not to —

ARTEVELDE.

Van den Bosch,  
 Talk we of battle and survey the field,  
 For I *will* fight. Let stakes be driven in  
 Amongst the rushes at the nether end  
 Of this morass. Van Ryk, look thou to that.  
 And thou, Van Muck, unload the victual here ;  
 Then tilt the wagons up behind the stakes,  
 And pierce them for cross-bows. A horse for me,  
 That I may know the ground. And now, friends all,  
 Let's to our charges with due diligence.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

AN OPEN TENT ERECTED FOR PUBLIC ENTERTAINMENT  
 IN THE MARKET-PLACE OF BRUGES.

*Boisterous songs, and other sounds of riot and jollity  
 are heard on all sides. Within the Tent a miscella-  
 neous company are drinking, and amongst them is  
 UKENHEIM, in the dress of a Mariner of Bruges.*

UKENHEIM.

I pray you pledge me in this, to our better acquaint-  
 ance.

LUNYZ.

At your service, Sir. What say'st thou, Jan Trickle? Is not this the right way? Is not this the narrow road? Knew'st thou ever a Saint's day more seemly celebrated? Dost see what a devotion there is to it!

TRICKLE.

I see very many righteous gentlemen very drunk. But my wife says, were they at church it should be more seemly.

KROOLKHUYS.

Bah! didst ever know a man's wife that liked him to be drinking without her to help?

TRICKLE.

Mine is a rare helpmate.

LUNYZ.

Let the church speak. Father Swillen, is not this as it should be?

FATHER SWILLEN.

My son, and worthy burgesses, and beloved brethren! Of the present solemnity I will deliver my opinion according to the canons. Wine is to be used cum abinentiâ et temperantiâ, for the recovery of the sick, the consolation of the dying, and the healing of a wounded spirit. It is also to be used in honor of our Lady of Bolayne on this the day of her festival. But the presence of a priest is needful herein, for the preventing of abuses, and the showing of a proper example.

*(Drinks.)*

TACKENHAM (*advancing from the farther end of the Tent*).

Father Swillen — friend, if I knocked you down I ask your pardon — Father Swillen — Sirs, give me place, for I must see the Father — Father Swillen, I look upon you to be one man of a thousand — I will go on my knees to you — I look upon you to be the oracle of God — I look upon you to be the invisible oracle of God — for there you are, and I see you not — I can stand, — I say I can stand — but here I kneel down, and I will not rise unless you stretch forth your hand to me and raise me up — and this is the view I take of our duties as Christian men — all which is submitted to your better judgment, and I would that all men paid their dues to the Church.

FATHER SWILLEN.

God requite you, my son! for their salvation, — for their salvation — nothing else.

LUNYZ. (*looking out into the Market-place*).

Here is a minstrel twiddles with the strings of his cithern. Now we shall hear a song.

THE FOLLOWING SONG IS SUNG TO A VULGAR TUNE.

Who mounts the merry-go-round with me,  
 Who mounts the merry-go-round?  
 'T is I, I, I, — and who be ye  
 That would mount the merry-go-round?

A Blacksmith I, — spearheads as good  
 As e'er from Bordeaux came  
 I 've made, and would in Ghentsmen's blood  
 Be bold to dip the same.

Who mounts the merry-go-round with me,  
 Who mounts the merry-go-round ?  
 'T is I, I, I, — and who may'st be,  
 That would mount the merry-go-round ?

A Cutler I, — as true a blade  
 As ever Ebro steeled  
 Is this I've made, nor will 't be stayed  
 By any Ghentsman's shield.

Who mounts the merry-go-round with me,  
 Who mounts the merry-go-round ?  
 'T is I, I, I, — and now let us see  
 Who mounts the merry-go-round.

A Barber I, — and well appeared  
 My handicraft, for when  
 A Ghentsman's beard I shortly sheared,  
 It never grew again.

Who mounts the merry-go-round with me,  
 Who mounts the merry-go-round ?  
 'T is I, I, I, — and a Priest was he  
 That would mount the merry-go-round.

A Ghentsman of his wounds lay sick,  
 And shall I be saved ? he cried ;  
 I gave him a kick, bade him ask old Nick,  
 And he should be satisfied.

## KROOLKHUYS.

I' faith he sings like a nightingale. No more, thank  
 you, — I cannot — cannot . . . well, if I' must . . .  
 (*drinks.*) 'T is a charming lullaby, and the sentiment  
 very tender and soothing. Let us all do as we would  
 be done by ; God bless us ! (*Falls asleep.*)

(*Suddenly is heard from the Market-place a loud  
 cry of 'To arms ! To arms !'*)

UKENHEIM (*starting up and drawing his sword*).

To arms? what! the men of Ghent come to us?  
What! the scarecrows from Ghent! To arms! to  
arms! out and down with them! to arms! to arms!

KROOLKHUYS (*waking*).

Why how is this? the men of Ghent! what ho!  
give me my coat of proof.

UKENHEIM.

Let cowards stay behind. To arms! to arms!

(*They rush out confusedly. TACKENHAM creeps  
from under the table, where he had remained in  
a reclining posture.*)

TACKENHAM.

To arms! I look upon Father Swillen to be an  
oracle, and it were to be wished that all men paid the  
church her dues.

[*Exit.*]

### SCENE III.

THE PALACE.

*The LORD OF OCCO and GILBERT MATTHEW.*

GILBERT MATTHEW.

His Highness will be here anon. Sir Guy,  
Freely accept the combat for the morrow.  
Count on my speed. There's not a man in Bruges  
Who has outlived the day I wished him dead.

The threads of many destinies I hold,  
 Unknown to them they bind for life or death,  
 And I am punctual as the planet stars.  
 A winter's night, as long as nights are now,  
 Is worth an age.

occo.

One doubt detains me still.  
 The Earl, if ever it were known would —

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Hark!

'T is over, that. He loves him now no more.  
 For every philtre that can make men love,  
 I know the secret of an antidote.  
 I've warned him of those private ties in Ghent.  
 Enough. I've dosed him.

occo.

Well, it shall be done.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

I will provide thee hands.

occo.

You shall not need.  
 I have already sent for two tried men, —  
 Italians; they are practised hands and fit.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

I'll lay a crown 't is Erclo and Romero.

occo.

The same.

*Enter the EARL.*

EARL.

What shouting's this I hear abroad ?

OCCO.

The revellers, my good lord ; they pitch the bar,  
And shoot with cross-bows for a prize. My lord,  
At noon to-morrow, if his heart but hold,  
I'll meet Sir Walter D'Arlon.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

In good truth  
But are these shouts of revel ? Hark, again !  
They cry, ' to arms.'

EARL.

By, heaven I think 't is that.  
And hear ye not the bells ? They're ringing back-  
wards.

OCCO.

'T is an alarm.

*Enter* THE LORD OF D'ARLON, SIR ROBERT MARES-  
CHAULT *and* OTHERS.

EARL.

' Well, D'Arlon, what is this ?

D'ARLON.

The men of Ghent, my lord, the men of Ghent.

EARL.

What, here ?

D'ARLON.

Two miles aloof they make a stand.



EARL.

What, are they mad?

D'ARLON.

I think not mad, my lord,

But desperate.

EARL.

My friends, 't is all as one.

Now shall this war be gloriously ended,  
And famine, that was tedious, be o'erta'en.  
Bring out my banner, summon all to arms,  
Then forth and fight them.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Please you, Sir, to say

How many they may number.

SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT.

At a guess

About five thousand.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

May they move, or stand?

SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT.

Since they were first descried they have not stirred.

EARL.

Forth with my banner; out with horse and foot.  
Sir knights, we muster in the market-place.  
Bring me my armor, ho!

GILBERT MATTHEW.

My lord, one word,  
Ere yet the knights depart. These men are few,

But they are desperate; famine-bitten are they,  
 But alway are the leanest wolves most brave  
 To break the fold. Sir, let us not be rash;  
 Our men-at-arms are somewhat flushed with drink,  
 And may be ill to guide. Sir, think upon it.  
 Fight them to-morrow. Let them sleep to-night  
 In winter's lap, beneath the ragged tent  
 Of a December's sky. When morning breaks  
 You'll see them lying upon yon hill-side  
 As dead and sapless as the last month's leaves.  
 Give them this night.

## THE HASE OF FLANDERS.

Nay, nay, they'll think we fear them.

## GILBERT MATTHEW.

Think they their will; whate'er they think of that  
 They shall unthink to-morrow.

## EARL.

By my faith  
 I know not, Gilbert, but thou may'st have reason.  
 The winter's night is sure to thin their ranks  
 Of fighting men; and if they're scantily stored  
 With victual, which is probable to think,  
 They shall endure it worse.

*Enter the MAYOR in haste.*

## MAYOR.

My lord, my lord,  
 The crafts fly forth by thousands from the gates,  
 Unordered and unled.

EARL.

Who kept the gates?  
 How came they open? Walter, haste thee, haste!  
 And bring the madmen back.

[*Exit D'ARLON.*]

How came they open?

MAYOR.

A simple mariner avouched, my lord,  
 That he had heard your highness's own mouth  
 Give out the order.

EARL.

Hang the slave! he lied.

MAYOR.

Why so the warders thought, and had not done it,  
 But that the people, being much inflamed,  
 Menaced their lives.

*Enter a SQUIRE.*

SQUIRE.

Sir Walter, Sir, sends word  
 The town is almost emptied. He entreats  
 Your highness will not look to bring them back,  
 Which is past hope, but sound at once to arms,  
 And send them leaders that are gone unled.

EARL.

Now, Gilbert, we must forth.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Aye, go we forth.  
 Fifty to five, we surely must do well,

Though, peradventure, for the sparing lives  
We might have done more wisely.

EARL.

Sirs, be sudden;  
And when you 're mounted in the market-place,  
I'll give you there your charges. Sound to horse.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV.

THE FIELD OF MERLE, AS IN THE FIRST SCENE.

VAN ARTEVELDE, VAN RYK, VAN MUCK, *and others.*

ARTEVELDE.

See'st thou yon sweeping section of the road  
That leads by Ecdorf to the Eastern gate?  
My eyes are strained, but yet I thought I saw  
A moving mass of men.

VAN RYK.

I thought so too.  
When I had held mine eyes a minute fixed,  
As in a morsel of dry mouldered cheese,  
I thought I could descry a tumbling movement.

ARTEVELDE.

Who hath the longest and the clearest sight  
Of all our men? go bring him. Nay, stop, stop,  
I think we shall not need him; now, look there.  
By heaven, they come! they come! Ha! Van den  
Bosch!

*Enter VAN DEN BOSCH.*

I give you joy! by heaven, we have our wish.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Yea, Sir, they come, and now betide what may,  
We'll mix the Evil One a mess for supper  
In yonder darksome pool.

ARTEVELDE.

' A ruddier tinge  
'Than ever evening cast, shall warm its waters,  
Or ere yon sun be down. What ho! Van Serl,  
Serve out the victual all — but first to prayers.  
We will be shriven first and then we'll sup,  
And after that we'll cut a road to bed,  
Be it in Bruges or in a better place.  
Van Ryk, abide thou here, and bring me word  
If any man approach by other ways;  
And when the foremost of the troop we see  
Have past yon broken wall, then sound thy horn,  
And I will send thee forces wherewithal  
To keep thy post. There's food behind the carts  
Whereof partake with them I'll send thee.

VAN RYK.

Nay,

I shall want nothing, Sir.

ARTEVELDE.

I tell thee, eat.  
Eat and be fresh. I'll send a priest to shrive thee.  
Van Muck, thou tak'st small comfort in thy prayers;  
Put thou thy muzzle in yon tub of wine.

Now, Van den Bosch, or ere the sun go down,  
We'll know the will of Heaven.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Have with thee, Philip!  
Thou art a brave and honorable man,  
And I would have thee know that should we fall,  
Either or both, I bear thee now no grudge;  
And so may Heaven forgive my many sins,  
As I do thee.

ARTEVELDE.

Why, thou art now thyself.  
With heart and hand we'll fall upon the foe,  
And do the work like brothers. Come thy ways.

[*Exeunt all but VAN RYK and VAN MUCK.*]

VAN RYK.

Van Muck, I prithee step along the path  
That rounds the hill, and mark if on that side  
Aught may be stirring.

VAN MUCK.

Aye, and if there be,  
I'll shout and hail thee.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter CLARA, dressed as a Page.*

VAN RYK.

Why, my little man,  
How cam'st thou hither? 't is no place for thee!  
What, cam'st thou with the army?

CLARA.

Yea, good Sir.

VAN RYK.

Who bid thee come? I never saw the like;  
To bring so tender and so young a thing  
To fields of battle!

CLARA.

No man brought me, Sir.  
It was my will to come.

VAN RYK.

God help thee, boy!  
A wayward will was that. What, wilt thou fight?

CLARA.

If my heart fail not.

VAN RYK.

If thou think'st it would,  
Why cam'st thou here?

CLARA.

A brother whom I love  
Marched with you. It was partly for his sake;  
And if my heart betray me, oh! he'll fight  
Enough for two.

VAN RYK.

Now couch thee by yon carts,  
And dream not thou of fighting.

CLARA.

Is it true  
That half an hour will bring the battle on?

VAN RYK.

Less time than that. Thou see'st how fast they come.  
But now we scarce distinguished if they moved,

And now upon the skirts of yonder mass,  
I can discern them single man by man.

CLARA.

Canst thou descry the pennons of the knights  
That lead them ?

VAN RYK.

Truly I perceive not one,  
I do but see a multitude of heads ;  
No banner, pennon, nor a mounted man.  
If any knight be there he comes afoot.

CLARA.

The Lord of Arlon surely must be there.  
He's always with the foremost.

VAN RYK.

If he be,  
His pennon is not.

CLARA.

Ah, but look again ;  
I see some knights that gallop up behind,  
And pennons now come streaming on the road,  
Between the town and them.

VAN RYK.

Good faith, 't is true.  
Thou hast sharp eyes.

CLARA.

Now tell me which of these  
Is D'Arlon's pennon.

VAN RYK.

Presently I'll tell thee ;



I cannot yet distinguish. Come this way  
 And we shall see them better. Through the gap.  
[*Exeunt.*]

---

## SCENE V.

ANOTHER PART OF THE FIELD.

VAN ARTEVELDE *and others.*

ARTEVELDE.

Their cross-bow shafts have touched us on that side,  
 And ours fly large. We're dazzled by the sun.  
 Bid Van den Bosch give gently back and back,  
 And wind them round the slough; I'll hover here;  
 And soon as he have turned his back o' the sun,  
 Let him stand fast and shoot. Thou hast thine errand;  
 Let it not cool. And you, Sirs, follow me.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.

ANOTHER PART OF THE FIELD.

*The LORD OF ARLON and GILBERT MATTHEW.*

GILBERT MATTHEW.

How came they thus? My lord, I needs must say,  
 A soldier's courage, not a leader's skill,  
 Has placed them here.

D'ARLON.

Skill! what can skill avail?  
 Could I have made men sober that were drunk?  
 The meanest archer with his senses whole  
 Would not have rushed to stare the sun i' the face  
 As these have done;—but nothing could withhold  
 them.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

They will not long hold out.

D'ARLON.

I prithee fly,  
 And tell the Earl to send us succors up.  
 I'll keep them steady, if I can, till then.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

 SCENE VII.

ANOTHER PART OF THE FIELD.

CLARA *following* VAN LINDEN, *a man-at-arms.*

CLARA.

Here, hearken to me, man; give ear, I say;  
 Where fights the Lord of Arlon?

VAN LINDEN.

Let me go;  
 Nay, hold me not; the game that's now afoot  
 Is not for boys to meddle in.

CLARA.

Yet stay ;  
Tell me, doth D'Arlon live, or hath he fallen ?

VAN LINDEN.

God ! what care I for D'Arlon or for thee !  
I tell thee, boy, let go.

CLARA.

No boy am I.

Look here !

*(She uncovers her head and looses her hair.)*

Clara Van Artevelde it is that speaks,  
And she desires to know where D'Arlon fights.

VAN LINDEN.

Beseech you, lady, pardon my mistake,  
And my too blunt behaviour. With your eye  
If you can follow forth yon dry stone wall  
Down to the hollow, and where further on  
Again it rises, you shall see a crowd  
Of fighting men, and in the midst of them  
The pennon of the Lord of Arlon flies —  
By Heaven ! but I think no — a minute since  
It there was flying, but I think 't is down.

[Exit CLARA.]

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE with followers from the one side,  
and VAN RYK with followers from the other.*

ARTEVELDE.

How is 't with you ? On our side all is well.  
One half their host is foundered in the swamp,  
The other full in flight.

VAN RYK.

On our side too,  
They all have fled ; but further down the field  
The D'Arlon still stands fast.

ARTEVELDE.

Set on, — set on —  
Make for the spot. Thou look'st as thou would'st  
speak ?

VAN LINDEN.

Sir, know you that your sister's in the field ?

ARTEVELDE.

My sister, — no !

VAN LINDEN.

But now, Sir, she was here.  
And with such flighty haste departed hence,  
That if she be not looked to, I'm afraid  
In the confusion of the field, mishap  
Might easily befall her.

ARTEVELDE.

Here but now ?  
Show me then whitherward she went. — Ah, Clara !  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VIII.

A STREET IN BRUGES.

*It is night. The EARL of FLANDERS and SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT enter, preceded by Attendants bearing torches.*

EARL.

What succors we can find I'll lead myself.  
Was ever such disaster! madmen first,  
And cowards after!

*Enter a SOLDIER in haste.*

SOLDIER.

Fly, my lord! fly, fly!  
The gates are lost; they're now within the walls.

EARL.

Why say they are, and must I therefore fly?  
Make for the market-place; we'll rally there  
Whoever will be rallied. — Pass we on —  
Lights to to the market-place!

*Enter another SOLDIER.*

SOLDIER.

Is't you, my lord?  
Oh! not that way! the men of Ghent are there.  
Fly, fly, my lord!

EARL.

The men of Ghent are where?

SOLDIER.

I' the market-place, my lord.

EARL.

What, there already!

SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT.

Put out your lights.

EARL.

Aye, truly, now all 's lost.

Put out your lights, good fellows all, and fly.

Save me you cannot, and you may yourselves.

*(The lights are extinguished.)*

Which way to turn I know not.

SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT.

Down the street

I see the flash of cressets that come hither;

Hence, in God's name! Here, varlet, doff thy cloak,

And give it to my lord.

EARL.

Throw mine i' the gutter,

Or it might else betray thy life. Get hence;

But if thou fallest in the enemy's hands,

Have a good tongue, and say not thou hast seen me.

Adieu, Sir Robert; each the other hazards

By holding thus together.

SIR ROBERT MARESCHAULT.

Sir, farewell.

[Exit.

*(The EARL, left alone, knocks at the door of a house; a window is opened above, and a woman looks out.)*

WOMAN.

Who's he that knocks?

EARL.

A much endangered man.

WOMAN.

We're all endangered on such nights as these;  
I cannot let thee in.

EARL.

I pray thee do.

WOMAN.

Art thou a man-at-arms?

EARL.

Truly I am.

WOMAN.

Then get thee gone; they'll ransack every house  
To hunt out men-at-arms. Go, get thee gone.

EARL.

I have no arms upon me.

WOMAN.

Get thee gone.

EARL.

I am the Earl of Flanders.

WOMAN.

Good my lord!

Oh mercy! my good lord, and is it you?

Woe's me! I'll ope the door. The many times  
That alms were given me at your lordship's gate,  
And I to hold you haggling here! Woe's me!

*(She descends and opens the door.)*

Come in, my gracious lord ; up yonder steps  
 You'll find a cock-loft and a couch of straw ;  
 Betwixt the matrass and the boards lie flat,  
 And you may well be hidden. Here are lights !  
 Come in, come in.

*(They enter the house.)*

*Enter VAN MUCK, followed by several men of Ghent.  
 He knocks at the door.*

VAN MUCK.

No answer ? Nay, then, knock me in this door.

*(The Woman opens it.)*

WOMAN.

Why, gentlemen, you would not sure molest  
 A widow and her children.

VAN MUCK.

Who's within ?

WOMAN.

Three helpless orphans ; as I hope for mercy  
 No soul beside.

VAN MUCK.

Wilt take thy oath of that ?

WOMAN.

I pray God strike me dead upon the threshold  
 If any be within but my three babes,  
 Myk, Lodowyk, and Jan.

VAN MUCK.

Why as we came

We saw a man go in.



WOMAN.

Good Sir, good Sir,  
 You are deceived ; there was no man at all.  
 'T was I looked out and emptied down a bucket.  
 A man ! God help us ! no.

VAN MUCK.

Go in and see.  
*(Some of the men enter the house.)*

WOMAN.

Walk in, good gentlemen, walk in and welcome.  
 You see my humble house : one room below,  
 And one above. Sir, will you not walk in ?

VAN MUCK.

No, no ; I'll keep the door.

WOMAN.

These times, sweet Sir,  
 Are hard for widowed women and their babes.  
*(The men come out again.)*

ONE OF THE MEN.

'T is as she says : three children are asleep  
 In the cock-loft, and there is none beside.

VAN MUCK.

Good even to you, dame. Friends, follow me.  
*[Exeunt VAN MUCK and his men.]*

WOMAN.

Beshrew your hearts, ye filthy dogs of Ghent !  
 The devil catch you by the throat ! for once  
 You've missed your game. Ah, my sweet lord, away !  
*(She goes into the house, and the scene closes.)*

## SCENE IX.

## THE MARKET-PLACE OF BRUGES.

*In front VAN ARTEVELDE, with CLARA and D'ARLON.  
Next, UKENHEIM, FRANS ACKERMAN, VAN NUITRE,  
and other Leaders. Behind them are crowds of armed  
Followers and Attendants, bearing torches; of whom  
some companies march off from time to time under  
orders from their Captains, and others remain keeping  
guard over prisoners and spoil.*

ARTEVELDE.

War hath dealt hardly with the noble D'Arlon;  
Him gold not ransoms, and to stricter bonds  
A captive knight was never yet consigned.

*(Turning to his Followers.)*

Van Muck returns not. Who amongst you all  
Hath eye of lynx and leveret's foot to speed  
Through all the town with inquisition sure,  
And leave no corner of a house unsearched.  
Where is Van Ryk?

UKENHEIM.

He left us at the gates.

ARTEVELDE.

True, true, despatched by me upon an errand;  
He will be here anon. Then, Ukenheim,  
Go thou, with such assistance as thou wilt,  
Upon the quest, through every lane and street.  
Take him, if possibly ye can, alive.  
Evil and folly hath he wrought against us,

But never treason ; he had wronged us less  
 But for the renegades that gave him counsel.  
 Bring forth the Lord of Occo.

*(Occo is brought forward bound.)*

So, my lord !

*Enter VAN MUCK and his Party.*

VAN MUCK.

A prisoner, Sir, we bring ; 't is Gilbert Matthew.

ARTEVELDE.

And not the Earl ?

VAN MUCK.

'T is said that he's escaped,  
 And ta'en the road to Lisle. He lay some space  
 Hid in a hovel till the search went by,  
 And then he fled away.

ARTEVELDE.

Long must thou wait,  
 Earl, ere thou see thy heritage again !  
 Bring Gilbert Matthew forth.

*(He is brought in bound.)*

So, Gilbert Matthew !

GILBERT MATTHEW.

Young upstart, what wouldst thou with Gilbert Mat-  
 thew ?

ARTEVELDE.

Be patient, Sir ; you'll know it. Where art thou,  
 Frans Ackerman ? Ere midnight let me see  
 A hundred wagons on their way to Ghent,  
 Loaden with corn and wine. At dawn send forth

To Damme and Sluys, and empty out their stores  
 For a fresh convoy. Have me men prepared  
 To ride to Ypres, Courtray, Cassel, Bergues,  
 To Poperinguen, and to Rousselaere,  
 And bid the mayor and burghers of each town  
 Send me its keys. — Well met, bold Van den Bosch!

*Enter VAN DEN BOSCH, with followers.*

Well met at Bruges, my brethren in arms!  
 As ye were brave, so be ye temperate now. 240  
 Let not the small-crafts suffer. Spare their blood,  
 For they but followed in the train of power,  
 And many wished us in their hearts no ill.  
 To all shall plunder plentifully flow  
 Out of the coffers of the rich; but him  
 That spills a foreigner's or craftsman's blood  
 I mulct of all his share, and, this night past,  
 The price (not willingly so long postponed,  
 But needfully for this tumultuous night)  
 Of all blood-guiltiness is paid in blood.  
 Take heed of what I say; — ye ought to know  
 For good or ill my promises are kept.  
 The debt of vengeance which is due to Ghent  
 You shall behold acquitted where you stand.

*(Turning to Occo and GILBERT MATTHEW.)*

Look, Van den Bosch, upon your former friends,  
 And tell me what's their due.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

In this world, death,  
 And after that let Satan tend his own.  
 I should commend their bodies to the rack,

But that I'm loath so long to keep their souls  
Out of hell-fire.

occo.

Thy heart was ever hard ;  
But, Artevelde, *thou* wilt not stain thy hands  
By killing in cold blood two helpless men !  
If thou 'rt a soldier, do not such a deed.  
Soldiers by soldiers in the field are slain,  
Not murdered in the market-place.

ARTEVELDE.

I grant thee.  
And if the name of soldier can be claimed  
By both or one of you, ye shall not die.  
Bring forth the friar.

(*A FRIAR is brought forward*)

Save you, holy Father !  
Say in the face of these two that stand here,  
That which thou said'st to me.

FRIAR.

Sir, it was this :  
Here in the hospital expired but now  
Of many wounds a Florentine, by name  
Romero, who, or ere he died, for shrift  
Confessed to me that he received a bribe  
From Gilbert Matthew and Sir Guy of Occo,  
To kill the Lord of Arlon, for some spite  
That each had to him.

occo.

Miscreant, he lied !  
Whoe'er procured him, it was never I.

Master Van Artevelde, my Lord of Arlon,  
Believe not I would sin in such a sort.  
Have mercy on a miserable man !

*(Falls on his knees.)*

Oh God ! there 's some mistake, or else he lied.

GILBERT MATTHEW.

How say'st thou that he lied ? Sirs, it is true  
I with this craven beggarly companion —  
Of whose accompliceship to do the deed,  
And not the deed itself, I speak with shame —  
I with this caitiff truly did conspire,  
For good and ample reasons, to remove  
Sir Walter D'Arton from this troublesome world.  
Such chances as no prudence could forefend,  
Have baulked my purpose, and I go myself.  
Wherefore, Sirs, God be with you ! To the block !  
What are ye dreaming of, ye sluggish hinds ?

ARTEVELDE (*signs to the Men-at-Arms, who lead out*  
GILBERT MATTHEW).

Aye, Gilbert, God forgive thee for thy sins !  
Thou steppest stately the only walk  
Thou hast to take upon this solid earth.  
Full many a better man less bravely dieth.  
Take forth the other too.

occo.

Stop : hear me yet.

If through pretext of justice I am doomed,  
Some better witness and more credible  
Than Gilbert or Romero should depose  
To guilt their spite would falsely fix upon me.

*Enter VAN RYK, conducting ADRIANA, who throws herself into the arms of VAN ARTEVELDE. He supports her, and addresses himself to OCCO.*

ARTEVELDE.

Lo! here a witness! look upon this face,  
And bid death welcome. Lead him to the block.

ADRIANA.

Oh, spare him; speak not now of shedding blood,  
Now, in this hour of happiness! Oh, spare him!  
Vengeance is God's, whose function take not thou!  
Philip, be merciful and spare his life.

ARTEVELDE.

Not though an angel plead. Vengeance is God's;  
But God doth oftentimes dispense it here  
By human ministration. To my hands  
He rendered victory this eventful day  
For uses higher than my happiness.  
Let Flanders judge me from my deeds to-night,  
That I from this time forth will thus proceed,  
Justice with mercy tempering where I may;  
But executing always. Lead him out.

*(Occo is led out.)*

Now, Adriana, I am wholly thine.

*(The curtain falls.)*

END OF THE FIRST PART.

*The curtain falls upon the fancied stage,  
 The tale half told : here rest thee, reader sage ;  
 Pause here and trim thine intellectual light,  
 Which, more than mine, shall make my meanings bright.  
 That ancient writer whose romantic heart  
 Loved war in every shape,—its pride, its art,  
 Its shows, appurtenance,—whose page is still  
 The theatre of war, turn where we will,—  
 That old historian, of whose truthful text  
 I dog the heels,—me whither leads he next ?  
 To dark descents he guides me ; sad and stern,  
 Him following forth, the lesson that I learn ;  
 That in the shocks of powers so wild and rude,  
 Success but signifies vicissitude ;  
 That of that man who seeks a sovran sphere,  
 The triumph is the trial most severe.  
 And yet in times so stormy, in a land  
 Where virtue's self held forth a bloody hand  
 To greet armed justice,—in such times as these  
 Still woman's love could find the way to please.*



*Thus in the tissue of my tale, hercin  
By records not unvouched, again I spin,  
As heretofore, an interwoven thread  
Of feminine affection fancy-fed.*

— *Rest thee a space : or if thou lov'st to hear  
A soft pulsation in thine easy ear,  
Turn thou the page, and let thy senses drink  
A lay that shall not trouble thee to think.  
Quitting the heroine of the past, thou'll see  
In this prefigured her that is to be,  
And find what life was hers before the date  
That with the Fleming's fortunes linked her fate  
This sang she to herself one summer's eve,  
A recreant from festivities that grieve  
The heart not festive ; stealing to her bower,  
With this she whiled away the lonely evening hour.*

---

## THE LAY OF ELENA.

HE asked me had I yet forgot  
The mountains of my native land ?  
I sought an answer, but had not  
The words at my command.  
They would not come, and it was better so,  
For had I uttered aught, my tears I know  
Had started at the word as free to flow.

But I can answer when there 's none that hears ;  
And now if I should weep, none sees my tears ;  
And in my soul the voice is rising strong,  
That speaks in solitude, — the voice of song.

Yes, I remember well  
The land of many hues,  
Whose charms what praise can tell,  
Whose praise what heart refuse ?  
Sublime, but neither bleak nor bare,  
Nor misty, are the mountains there, —  
Softly sublime, profusely fair !  
Up to their summits clothed in green,  
And fruitful as the vales between,  
They lightly rise,  
They scale the skies,  
And groves and gardens still abound ;  
For where no shoot  
Could else take root,

The peaks are shelved and terraced round ;  
 Earthward appear, in mingled growth,  
     The mulberry and maize, — above  
 The trellised vine extends to both  
     The leafy shade they love.  
 Looks out the white-walled cottage here,  
 The lowly chapel rises near ;  
 Far down the foot must roam to reach  
 The lovely lake and bending beach ;  
 Whilst chestnut green and olive grey  
 Chequer the steep and winding way.

A bark is launched on Como's lake,  
     A maiden sits abaft ;  
 A little sail is loosed to take  
     The night wind's breath, and waft  
 The maiden and her bark away,  
 Across the lake and up the bay.  
 And what doth there that lady fair,  
     Upon the wavelet tossed ?  
 Before her shines the evening star,  
 Behind her in the woods afar  
     The castle lights are lost.  
 What doth she there ? The evening air  
 Lifts her locks, and her neck is bare ;  
 And the dews, that now are falling fast,  
 May work her harm, or a rougher blast  
     May come from yonder cloud,  
 And that her bark might scarce sustain,  
 So slightly built, — and why remain,  
     And would she be allowed

To brave the wind and sit in the dew  
At night on the lake, if her mother knew?

Her mother sixteen years before  
The burthen of the baby bore;  
And though brought forth in joy, the day  
So joyful, she was wont to say,  
In taking count of after years,  
Gave birth to fewer hopes than fears.

For seldom smiled

The serious child,

And as she passed from childhood grew  
More far-between those smiles, and few,  
More sad and wild.

And though she loved her father well,

And though she loved her mother more,  
Upon her heart a sorrow fell,

And sapped it to the core.

And in her father's castle nought  
She ever found of what she sought,  
And all her pleasure was to roam  
Amongst the mountains far from home,  
And through thick woods, and wheresoe'er  
She saddest felt, to sojourn there;  
And oh! she loved to linger afloat  
On the lonely lake in the little boat!

It was not for the forms, — though fair,  
Though grand they were beyond compare, —  
It was not only for the forms  
Of hills in sunshine or in storms,

Or only unrestrained to look  
On wood and lake, that she forsook  
By day or night  
Her home, and far  
Wandered by light  
Of sun or star.

It was to feel her fancy free,  
Free in a world without an end,  
With ears to hear, and eyes to see,  
And heart to apprehend.

It was to leave the earth behind,  
And rove with liberated mind,  
As fancy led, or choice, or chance,  
Through wildered regions of romance.  
And many a castle would she build,  
And all around the woods were filled  
With knights and squires that rode amain,  
With ladies saved and giants slain ;  
And as some contest wavered, came,  
With eye of fire and breath of flame,  
A dragon that in cave profound  
Had had his dwelling underground ;  
And he had closed the dubious fight,  
But that, behold ! there came in sight  
A hippogriff, that wheeled his flight  
Far in the sky, then swooping low,  
Brings to the field a fresher foe :  
Dismayed by this diversion, fly  
The dragon and his dear ally ;  
And now the victor knight unties

The prisoner, his unhop'd for prize,  
And lo! a beauteous maid is she,  
Whom they, in their unrighteous guise,  
Had fasten'd naked to a tree!

Much dreaming these, yet was she much awake  
To portions of things earthly, for the sake  
Whereof, as with a charm, away would flit  
The phantoms, and the fever intermit.  
Whatso' of earthly things presents a face  
Of outward beauty, or a form of grace,  
Might not escape her, hidden though it were  
From courtly cognizance; 't was not with her  
As with the tribe who sees not nature's boons  
Save by the festal lights of gay saloons;  
Beauty in plain attire her heart could fill —  
Yea, though in beggary, 't was beauty still.  
Devoted thus to what was fair to sight,  
She loved too little else, nor this aright,  
And many disappointments could not cure  
This born obliquity, or break the lure  
Which this strong passion spread: she grew not  
wise,  
Nor grows: experience with a world of sighs  
Purchased, and tears and heart-break have been  
hers,  
And taught her nothing: where she erred she errs.

Be it avow'd, when all is said,  
She trod the path the many tread.  
She loved too soon in life; her dawn  
Was bright with sun-beams, whence is drawn

A sure prognostic that the day  
Will not unclouded pass away.  
Too young she loved, and he on whom  
Her first love lighted, in the bloom  
Of boyhood was, and so was graced  
With all that earliest runs to waste.  
Intelligent, loquacious, mild,  
Yet gay and sportive as a child,  
With feelings light and quick, that came  
And went like flickerings of flame ;  
A soft demeanor, and a mind  
Bright and abundant in its kind,  
That, playing on the surface, made  
A rapid change of light and shade,  
Or if a darker hour perforce  
At times o'ertook him in his course,  
Still sparkling thick like glowworms showed  
Life was to him a summer's road, —  
Such was the youth to whom a love  
For grace and beauty far above  
Their due deserts, betrayed a heart  
Which might have else performed a prouder

First love the world is wont to call  
The passion which was now her all.  
So be it called ; but be it known  
The feeling which possessed her now  
Was novel in degree alone ;  
Love early marked her for his own ;  
Soon as the winds of Heaven had blown  
Upon her had the seed been sown  
In soil which needed not the plough ;

And passion with her growth had grown,  
And strengthened with her strength, and how  
Could love be new, unless in name,  
Degree, and singleness of aim ?  
A tenderness had filled her mind  
Pervasive, viewless, undefined ; —  
As keeps the subtle fluid oft  
Its secret, gathering in the soft  
And sultry air, till felt at length  
In all its desolating strength,  
So silent, so devoid of dread,  
Her objectless affections spread ;  
Not wholly unemployed, but squandered  
At large where'er her fancy wandered ;  
Till one attraction, one desire  
Concentred all the scattered fire ;  
It broke, it burst, it blazed amain,  
It flashed its light o'er hill and plain,  
O'er Earth below and Heaven above, —  
And then it took the name of love.

How fared that love ! the tale so old,  
So common, needs it to be told ?  
Bellagio's woods, ye saw it through  
From first accost to last adieu ;  
Its changes, seasons, you can tell, —  
At least you typify them well.  
First came the genial, hopeful Spring,  
With bursting buds and birds that sing,  
And fast though fitful progress made  
To brighter suns and broader shade,



Those brighter suns, that broader shade,  
They came, and richly then arrayed  
Was bough and sward, and all below  
Gladdened by Summer's equal glow.  
What next ? a change is slowly seen,  
    And deepeneth day by day  
The darker, soberer, sadder green  
    Prevenient to decay.  
Yet still at times through that green gloom,  
As sudden gusts might make them room,  
    And lift the spray so light,  
The berries of the mountain-ash,  
Arching the torrents foam and flash,  
    Waved gladly into sight.  
But rare those short-lived gleamings grew,  
And wore the woods a sicklier hue ;  
Destruction now his phalanx forms  
'Mid wailing winds and gathering storms ;  
And last comes Winter's withering breath,  
Keen as desertion, cold — cold as the har  
    death !

Is the tale told ? too well, alas !  
Is pictured here what came to pass.  
So long as light affections played  
Around their path, he loved the maid ;  
Loved in half gay, half tender mood,  
By passion touched, but not subdued ;  
Laughed at the flame he felt or lit ;  
Replied to tenderness with wit ;

Sometimes when passion brightlier burned,  
 Its tokens eagerly returned,  
 Then calm, supine, but pleased no less,  
 Softly sustained each soft caress.  
 She, watching with delight the while  
 His half-closed eyes and gradual smile,  
 (Slow pleasure's smile, how far more worth,  
 More beautiful than smiles of mirth!)  
 Seemed to herself when back she cast  
 A hurried look upon the past,  
     As changed from what she then had been,  
 As was the moon, who having run  
 Her orbit through since this begun,  
     Now shone ' apparent Queen.'  
 How dim a world, how blank a waste,  
 A shadowy orb how faintly traced,  
 Her crescent fancy first embraced!  
 How fair an orb, a world how bright,  
 How filled with glory and with light  
 Had now revealed itself to sight!  
 A glory of her essence grown,  
 A light incorporate with her own!

Forth from such paradise of bliss  
 Open the way and easy is,  
     Like that renowned of old;  
 And easier than the most was this,  
 For they were sorted more amiss  
     Than outward things foretold.  
 The goddess, that with cruel mirth  
 The daughters and the sons of earth

Mismatches, hath a cunning eye  
 In twisting of a treacherous tie ;  
 Nor is she backward to perceive  
 That loftier minds to lower cleave  
 With ampler love (as that which flows  
 From a rich source) than these to those ;  
 For still the source, not object, gives  
 The daily food whereon love lives.  
 The well-spring of his love was poor  
 Compared to hers ; his gifts were fewer :  
 The total light that was in him  
 Before a spark of her's grew dim ;  
 Too high, too grave, too large, too deep,  
 Her love could neither laugh nor sleep ;  
 And thus it tired him ; his desire  
 Was for a less consuming fire :  
 He wished that she should love him well,  
 Not wildly ; wished her passion's spell  
     To charm her heart, but leave her fancy free  
 To quicken converse, not to quell ;  
     He granted her to sigh, for so could he ;  
     But when she wept, why should it be ?  
 'T was irksome, for it stole away  
 The joy of his love-holiday.  
 Bred of such uncongenial mood  
 At length would some dim doubt intrude  
 If what he felt, so far below  
 Her passion's pitch, were love or no.  
 With that the common day-light's beam  
 Broke in upon his morning dream,  
 And as that common day advanced  
 His heart was wholly unentranced.

What followed was not good to do,  
Nor is it good to tell ;  
The anguish of that worst adieu  
Which parts with love and honor too,  
Abides not, — so far well.  
The human heart cannot sustain  
Prolonged inalterable pain,  
And not till reason cease to reign  
Will nature want some moments brief  
Of other moods to mix with grief ;  
Such and so hard to be destroyed  
That vigor which abhors a void,  
And in the midst of all distress,  
Such nature's need for happiness !  
And when she rallied thus, more high  
Her spirits ran, she knew not why,  
Than was their wont in times than these  
Less troubled, with a heart at ease.  
So meet extremes ; so joy's rebound  
Is highest from the hollowest ground ;  
So vessels with the storm that strive  
Pitch higher as they deeper drive.

Well had it been if she had curbed  
These transports of a mind disturbed ;  
For grief is then the worst of foes  
When, all intolerant of repose,  
It sends the heart abroad to seek  
From weak recoils exemptions weak ;  
After false gods to go astray,  
Deck altars vile with garlands gay,

And place a painted form of stone  
On Passion's abdicated throne.

Till then her heart was as a mound,  
Or simple plot of garden ground  
Far in a forest wild,

Where many a seedling had been sown,  
And many a bright-eyed floweret grown  
To please a favorite child.

Delighted was the child to call

The plot of garden-ground her own ;  
Delighted was she at the fall  
Of evening mild when shadows tall  
Cross-barred the mound and cottage wall,  
To linger there alone.

Nor seemed the garden flowers less fair,  
Nor loved she less to linger there,  
When glistened in the morning dew  
Each lip of red and eye of blue ;  
And when the sun too brightly burned  
Towards the forest's verge she turned,  
Where stretched away from glade to glade  
A green interminable shade ;  
And in the skirts thereof a bower  
Was built with many a creeping flower,  
For shelter at the noontide hour ;  
And from the forest walks was heard  
The voice of many a singing bird,  
With murmurs of the cushat-dove,  
That tell the secret of her love ;

And pleasant therefore all day long,  
From earliest dawn to even-song, —  
Supremely pleasant was this wild  
Sweet garden to the woodsman's child. —  
The whirlwind came with fire and flood  
And smote the garden in the wood ;  
All that was formed to give delight  
Destruction levelled in a night ;  
The morning broke, the child awoke,  
And when she saw what sudden stroke  
The garden which she loved had swept  
To ruin, she sat down and wept.  
Her grief was great, but it had vent ;  
Its force, not spared, was sooner spent ;  
And she bethought her to repair  
The garden which had been so fair.  
Then roamed she through the forest walks,  
Cropping the wild flowers by their stalks,  
And divers full-blown blossoms gay  
She gathered, and in fair array  
Disposed, and stuck them in the mound  
Which had been once her garden ground.  
They seemed to flourish for awhile,  
A moment's space she seemed to smile ;  
But brief the bloom, and vain the toil,  
They were not native to the soil.

That other child, beneath whose zone  
Were passions fearfully full-grown, —  
She too essayed to deck the waste  
Where love had grown, which love had graced,

With false adornments, flowers not fruit,  
 Fast-fading flowers, that strike no root,—  
 With pleasures alien to her breast,  
 That bloom but briefly at the best,  
 The world's sad substitutes for joys  
 To minds that lose their equipoise.

On Como's lake the evening star  
 Is trembling as before ;  
 An azure flood, a golden bar,  
 There as they were before they are,  
 But she that loved them — she is far,  
 Far from her native shore.  
 No more is seen her slender boat  
 Upon the star-lit lake afloat,  
 With oar or sail at large to rove,  
 Or tethered in its wooded cove  
 Mid gentle waves that sport around,  
 And rock it with a gurgling sound.  
 Keel up, it rots upon the strand,  
 Its gunwale sunken in the sand,  
 Where suns and tempests warped and shrank  
 Each shattered rib and riven plank.  
 Never again that land-wrecked craft  
 Shall feel the billow boom abaft ;  
 Never, when springs the freshening gale,  
 Take life again from oar or sail :  
 Nor shall the freight that once it bore  
 Again be seen on lake or shore.

A foreign land is now her choice,  
 A foreign sky above her,

And unfamiliar is each voice  
Of those that say they love her.  
A prince's palace is her home,  
And marble floor and gilded dome,  
Where festive myriads nightly meet,  
Quick echoes of her steps repeat.  
And she is gay at times, and light  
From her makes many faces bright ;  
And circling flatterers hem her in  
Assiduous each a word to win,  
And smooth as mirrors each the while  
Reflects and multiplies her smile.  
But fitful were her smiles, nor long  
She cast them to that courtly throng ;  
And should the sound of music fall  
Upon her ear in that high hall,  
The smile was gone, the eye that shone  
So brightly, would be dimmed anon,  
And objectless would then appear  
As stretched to check the starting tear.  
The chords within responsive rung,  
For music spoke her native tongue.

And then the gay and glittering crowd  
Is heard not, laugh they e'er so loud ;  
Nor then is seen the simpering row  
Of flatterers, bend they e'er so low ;  
For there before her, where she stands,  
The mountains rise, the lake expands ;  
Around the terraced summit twines  
The leafy coronal of vines ;



Within the watery mirror deep  
 Nature's calm converse lies asleep ;  
 Above she sees the sky's blue glow,  
 The forest's varied green below,  
 And far its vaulted vistas through  
 A distant grove of darker hue,  
 Where mounting high from clumps of oak  
 Curls lightly up the thin gray smoke ;  
 And o'er the boughs that over-bower  
 The crag, a castle's turret's tower —  
 An eastern casement mantled o'er  
     With ivy flashes back the gleam  
 Of sunrise, — it was there of yore  
 She sate to see that sunrise pour  
 Its splendor round — she sees no more,  
     For tears disperse the dream.

Thus seized and speechless had she stood,  
 Surveying mountain, lake, and wood,  
 When to her ear came that demand  
 Had she forgot her native land ?  
 'T was but a voice within replied  
 She had forgotten all beside.  
 For words are weak and most to seek  
     When wanted fifty-fold,  
 And then if silence will not speak,  
 Or trembling lip and changing cheek,  
     There's nothing told.  
 But could she have revealed to him  
     Who questioned thus, the vision bright,  
 That ere his words were said grew dim  
     And vanished from her sight,

Easy the answer were to know  
And plain to understand, —  
That mind and memory both must fail,  
And life itself must slacken sail,  
And thought its functions must forego,  
And fancy lose its latest glow,  
Or e'er that land  
Could pictured be less bright and fair  
To her whose home and heart are there !  
That land the loveliest that eye can see  
The stranger ne'er forgets, then how should she ?

---

— *Cease the soft sounds, the mellow voice is mute,  
And quivers to a close that plaintive lady's lute. —  
Pass we to matters masculine ; to strains  
Where weightier themes may pay the reader's pains.  
Again disclose we counsels of the wise,  
Deeds of the warlike : — let the Curtain rise.*

**CAMBRIDGE PRESS:**  
**METCALF, TORRY, AND BALLOU.**

# PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE;

A DRAMATIC ROMANCE,

IN TWO PARTS.

BY

HENRY TAYLOR, ESQ.

"Dramatica Poesis est veluti Historia spectabilis."

BACON DE AUGMENTIS.

VOL. II.

CAMBRIDGE AND BOSTON:

JAMES MUNROE AND COMPANY.

M DCCC XXXV.

CAMBRIDGE PRESS :  
METCALF, TORRY, AND BALLOU.

**PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE.**

**PART II.**

**“No arts, no letters, no society,—and which is worst of all, continual fear and danger of violent death, and the life of Man solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short.”**

**LEVIATHAN, Part I. c. 18.**

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

---

### MEN OF FLANDERS.

PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE, *Regent of Flanders.*

VAUCLAIRE, }  
ROOSDYK, } *Officers of his in command at Ypres.*

VAN RYK, }  
VAN MUCK, } *Officers in his camp before Oudenarde.*

FATHER JOHN OF HEDA.

A PAGE of *Van Artevelde's.*

A FRIAR.

VAN STOCKENSTROM, }  
VAN WHELK, } *Citizens of Ypres.*

THE BURGOMASTER AND DIVERS BURGESSES OF YPRES,  
OFFICERS, MESSENGERS, &c.

### MEN OF FRANCE.

KING CHARLES THE SIXTH.

THE DUKES OF BURGUNDY *and* BOURBON, *his Uncles.*

SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE, *a Follower of the Duke of Bourbon.*

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON, *Constable of France.*

SIR JOHN DE VIEN, *Admiral of France.*

THE LORDS OF SAIMPI, SANKERE, AND ST. JUST ; SIR  
RAOUL OF RANEVAL ; THE LORD OF COUCY, AND  
MANY OTHER LORDS AND KNIGHTS BELONGING TO  
THE FRENCH KING'S COUNCIL.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET, *Clerk of the Council.*

### WOMEN.

ELENA DELLA TORRE, *an Italian Lady.*

CECILE, *her Attendant.*

DAME VOORST, *a Woman of Ypres.*

---

The SCENE is laid sometimes in FLANDERS and sometimes in FRANCE.





# PHILIP VAN ARTEVELDE.

---

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.

AN ANTE-ROOM TO THE STATE APARTMENTS OF THE  
GRAND JUSTICIARY IN THE ROYAL PALACE AT SENLIS,  
IN FRANCE.

*Several groups of suitors holding petitions in their hands.  
In front a yeoman of Tournais, and near him SIR  
FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.*

SIR FLEUREANT.

If I may be so bold, friend, whence art thou?  
The times are stirring, and come whence thou may'st  
Thou must bring news.

YEOMAN.

So please your worship's grace  
I come from this side Tournay; I am French,  
And though I say it, Sir, an honest yeoman.

SIR FLEUREANT.

And, honest yeoman, what's thine errand here?

YEOMAN.

I have a suit, Sir, to my noble lord  
The Duke of Burgundy.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Why, what? — what suit?

YEOMAN.

'Tis but for justice, Sir; I crave but justice.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Hast thou the price of justice in thy pocket?

YEOMAN.

Nay, Sir, I am poor.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Poor, and want justice? — where was thy mother  
thrift

To bring thee up in such a poor estate,  
And yet to lack such dainties! Say wherein  
Would'st thou be justified? Who is't hath wronged  
thee?

YEOMAN.

Last Wednesday, Sir, a troop of Flemings, led  
By fierce Frans Ackerman, the frontier passed  
And burned my homestead, ravaged all my fields,  
And did sore havoc in the realm of France.

SIR FLEUREANT.

What say'st thou? is it so? Go to — go to —  
This is high matter. Thou'lt be heard on this.

*Enter* USHER.

USHER.

Depart ye, Sirs; his grace is with the king;  
He bids you all depart and come to-morrow;  
To-day his grace hath business with the king,  
And will not be molested. Clear the chamber.  
Their graces and the king are coming hither,  
And would be private; — prithee, Sir, depart.

*(To the YEOMAN, who lingers.)*

SIR FLEUREANT.

Take thou thy grievance to the outer hall,  
But go no further hence. Soft, master Usher;  
My friend shall have an audience of the duke.  
Look he be carefully bestowed without  
Till he be called. He is an injured man;  
An injured man, and being so, yet welcome.  
The grief he hath is worth its weight in gold.  
Bestow him carefully without.

USHER.

This way.

*[Exit, with the YEOMAN.]*

*Enter the DUKES OF BURGUNDY and BOURBON, in  
close conference.*

BURGUNDY.

Good morrow, Flurry. Not on us, good brother.  
I grant you were we rashly to make war,  
No council summoned, no estates convened,  
Then aught that should unhappily ensue

Might chance be charged on us, as natural guides,  
 And so reputed, of the youthful king.  
 But, backed by all the council, — yea, by all,  
 For I'll be warranty no voice dissents, —  
 Backed by the council, wherein weighty reasons  
 Shall be well urged —

## BOURBON.

Aye, brother, there it is ;  
 That you have reasons no man doubts at all,  
 And Jacques Bonhomme will be bold to say  
 That reasons which are rank in Burgundy  
 Have been transplanted to the soil of France,  
 That fits them not.

## BURGUNDY.

In Jacques Bonhomme's throat  
 I'll tell him that he slanders me and lies.  
 No soil in Christendom but fits my reasons ;  
 No soil where virtue, chivalry, and honor  
 Are fed and flourish, but shall fit them well.  
 When honor and nobility fall prone  
 In Flanders, think you they stand fast in France ?  
 Or losing ground in France, have hope elsewhere ?  
 This by no narrow bound is circumscribed ;  
 It is the cause of chivalry at large.  
 Though heir to Flanders I am Frenchman born,  
 And nearer have at heart the weal of France  
 Than my far off inheritance. Go to ;  
 Lay we before the council the sad truth  
 Of these distractions that so rock the realm, —  
 Paris possessed by Nicholas le Flamand

Where law's a nothing and the king a name;  
 Armies with mallets but beginning there,  
 And gathering like the snow wreaths in a storm -  
 Before a man hath time to get him housed,  
 At Chalons on the Marne, Champagne, Beauvoisin,  
 At Orleans, at Rheims, at Blois, and Rouen,  
 And every reach of road from Paris south.  
 Then point we to the North, where Artevelde  
 Wiolds at his single will the Flemish force,  
 Five hundred thousand swords; and ask what fate  
 Awaits our France, if those with these unite,  
 Bold villains both, and ripe for riving down  
 All royalty, — thereafter or therewith  
 Nobility! — Then strike whiles yet apart  
 Each single foe.

BOURBON.

But Philip speaks us fair.

BURGUNDY.

As fair as false.

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lords, there's proof of that  
 Here close at hand; a yeoman from Tournesis,  
 But now arrived with news of ravage done  
 On the French frontier.

BURGUNDY.

There, good brother, there!  
 There's Flemish friendship, Flemish love of peace!  
 Shall we make nought of this?

BOURBON.

We'll sift it, brother,  
 And find if it be true.

BURGUNDY.

Where is the man ?

SIR FLEUREANT.

I'll bring him in, my lord.

[*Exit.*

241 *Enter the KING with a Hawk on his hand.*

BURGUNDY.

How now, my royal cousin, have you done ?

Can you repeat the speech ?

KING.

Oh yes, good uncle.

' Right noble our liege councillors all, We greet you !

We have required your —

BURGUNDY.

Presence here this day.

KING.

' We have required your presence here this day  
 On matters of high import, which surcharge  
 Our royal mind that still affects the weal  
 Of our beloved lieges. Much to peace  
 Our tender years incline us, but — but — but —'  
 I'll fly my hawk, good uncle, now ; to-morrow  
 I'll say the rest. Come, Jerry, Jerry, Jerry !  
 He is a Marzarolt, uncle, just reclaimed ;  
 The best in France for flying at the fur.  
 Whew ! Jerry, Jerry, Jerry !

BURGUNDY.

Cousin, stay.

*Enter SIR FLEUREANT with the YEOMAN.*

Here is a worthy yeoman from Tournesis,  
Who hath a tale to tell of ravage done  
Upon the realm of France.

KING.

A yeoman, uncle?  
Here, worthy yeoman, you shall kiss our hand.  
Get off there, Jerry.

*(The YEOMAN kneels and kisses his hand.)*

BOURBON.

Now, Sir, from what place  
In France or Flanders, com'st thou?

YEOMAN.

Please your highness,  
'T was a small holding from my Lord of Vergues  
Close to the liberties of Fontenoy.

BOURBON.

This side the bourn?

YEOMAN.

Three miles, my lord, and long ones.

BURGUNDY.

Three miles in France.

BOURBON.

And what befell thee there?

YEOMAN.

My lord, my wife and I, on Wednesday night,  
Saw fires to the north and westward, up by Orcq



And round to Beau-Renard, and knew by that  
 The Flemish commons had been there, that late  
 Have roamed through Flanders, burning where they  
 came

The houses of the gentlemen and knights.  
 Then said my wife, Pierilla, if it please you,  
 ' 'Tis well we're yeomen and of poor estate,  
 And that we're lieges of a mightier lord  
 Than was the Count of Flanders: 't is God's mercy!  
 Or else might they that look from Beau-Renard  
 To the south and eastward, see this house on fire  
 To-morrow night, as we this night see theirs!'   
 But hardly had she said it, when due south  
 The sky was all on fire; and then we knew  
 The Flemings were in France, and Auzain burned.  
 We fled away; and, looking back, beheld  
 Our humble dwelling flaming like a torch.  
 So, then, quoth I, we'll to my Lord the King,  
 And tell what's come to pass.

## BURGUNDY.

Thou hast done well;  
 Retire: His Majesty will bring thy case  
 Before the council. Hold thyself prepared  
 To tell thy story there.

[*Exit*. YEOMAN.

I think, my royal cousin, though he's young,  
 Bears yet a mind too mettlesome to brook  
 Such wrongs as these. Your Majesty has heard:  
 The Flemish hordes lift plunder in your realm,  
 Driving your subjects from their peaceful homes,  
 Burning, destroying, wheresoe'er they reach,

And ever on nobility they fall  
 With sharpest tooth : let this have leave to grow,  
 And French insurgents shall from Flemish learn  
 The tricks of treason, — German boors from both ;  
 Till kings and princes, potentates and peers,  
 Landgraves, electors, palatines, and prelates,  
 Dukes, earls, and knights, shall be no more accounted  
 Than as the noblest and the loftiest trees,  
 Which when the woodsman walks the forest through,  
 He marketh for the axe. Your Majesty,  
 When once you take the field, shall make brief work  
 With the base Flemings, and with one sharp blow  
 Cut short by the head some twenty thousand treasons  
 Hatched lately, so to say, beneath the wings  
 Of this Van Artevelde, which chipped the shell  
 Two months ago, when Paris grew too hot  
 To hold us, and that now are fledged and entered.  
 I would your majesty were now in arms,  
 Leading your gallant troops.

KING.

To-morrow, uncle !

We will be armed and lead our troops to-morrow.  
 We 'll ride the chestnut with the bells at his heels.  
 Let it be done to-morrow.

BOURBON.

Should the council  
 Declare for war, your force cannot so soon  
 Be drawn together as your highness thinks,  
 Though it lies mainly hereabouts.

BURGUNDY.

No matter.

Speak boldly to the council as to us,  
 And if you 'd presently be in the field  
 Be diligent to learn your speech — come in —  
 Both that you have and something I 'll put to it  
 Touching this yeoman's grief — come in with me —  
 Ho! take away this hawk — and you shall have it.

[*Exeunt* DUKE OF BURGUNDY *with the* KING.]

. BOURBON.

My brother, Fleureant, is all too hot  
 In this affair; he's ever taking starts,  
 And leaving them that he should carry with him.  
 He'll fright the council from their calmer sense,  
 And drive them to some rash resolve.

BIR FLEUREANT.

My lord,  
 You shall perceive to-morrow at the board  
 How vast and voluble a thing is wit,  
 And what a sway a little of it hath  
 With councillors of state. My Lord of Burgundy  
 Will blaze and thunder through a three hours' speech,  
 And stamp and strike his fist upon the board,  
 Whilst casements rattling and a fall of soot  
 Shall threaten direful war.

BOURBON.

The Constable,  
 The Earls of Ewe, and Blois, St. Poule, and Laval,  
 Guesclin, St. Just, the Seneschal of Rieux,  
 Raoul of Raneval, — all these, and more,  
 Are to my certain knowledge clean against him.  
 They deem a mission should be sent to Flanders

Before the sword be drawn, and with my will  
Nought else shall come to pass.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Van Artevelde,  
Though obstinate at times, is politic too,  
And lacks not understanding ; he'll not brave  
The wrath of France if he be well entreated.

BOURBON.

I spake with one last night who came from Bruges,  
And on his way had sojourned in the camp  
At Oudenarde, where, when the turbulent towns  
Behind his back can spare him from their broils,  
Van Artevelde o'ersees the leaguering force.  
There was a market in the camp, he said,  
And all things plentiful, — fruit, cheese, and wine,  
All kinds of mercery, cloth, furs, and silks,  
With trinketry, the plunder daily brought  
By Van den Bosch's marauders. Went and came  
All men that chose from Brabant, Hainault, Liege,  
And Germany ; but Frenchmen were forbidden.  
Van Artevelde, he said, in all things apes  
The state and bearing of a sovereign prince ;  
Has bailiffs, masters of the horse, receivers,  
A chamber of accompt, a hall of audience,  
Off gold and silver eats, is clad in robes  
Of scarlet furred with minever, gives feasts  
With minstrelsy and dancing night and day  
To damsels and to ladies, — whom amongst  
Preëminent is that Italian whore  
Late domiciled with me, the girl Elena.

To Bruges in company with me she came,  
 Where waiting till on my return from Liege  
 I could rejoin her, to the conqueror's hands  
 She fell when Bruges was taken.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Soh, my lord!

That lady hath a hook that twitches still.  
 If what I heard in Gascony be true  
 You claimed her from Van Artevelde in vain,  
 Who answered not your missives.

BOURBON.

True it is;

And he shall answer for so answering not,  
 If any voice of potency is mine  
 Touching this war. But he may yet take thought  
 And make amends; I'll send him once again  
 A message, and I know not who's so fit  
 To take it as thyself.

SIR FLEUREANT.

My Lord, my tongue

Can utter nought with so much grace by half  
 As what you bid it speak; I'll bear your message.

BOURBON.

Not that for foolishness and woman's love  
 I would do this or that, but you shall note  
 My honor is impawned. Some half hour hence  
 Come to my chamber, where in privacy  
 We'll further speak of this; and bring thou there  
 The yeoman of Tournesis; he must learn

How to demean himself before the council.  
 He has been tampered with, I nothing doubt,  
 And what he's tutored to must we unteach.  
 Things run too fast to seed.

[*Exit.*]

SIR FLEUREANT.

What soldier's heart

By dotage such as his was e'er possessed  
 Upon a paramour. To win her back  
 Peace, war, or any thing to him were good,  
 Nought evil but what works contrariwise.  
 And still his love goes muffled up for shame  
 And masks itself with show of careless slights,  
 And giving her ill names of slut and jade,  
 Gipsy and whore. — The world's a masquerade,  
 And he whose wisdom is to pay it court  
 Should mask his own unpopular penetration,  
 And seem to think its several seemings real.

[*Exit.*]

---

SCENE II.

THE FLEMISH CAMP BEFORE OUDENARDE.

*A platform in front of VAN ARTEVELDE'S Tent.*

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE and VAN RYK.*

VAN RYK.

You seem fatigued, my Lord.

ARTEVELDE.

Look to that horse ; he coughs — I think I am ;  
The sun was hot for such a long day's ride.  
What is the hour ?

VAN RYK.

The moon has not yet risen,  
It cannot yet be nine.

ARTEVELDE.

Not nine ? well, well ;

' Be the day never so long  
At length cometh even-song.'

So saith the ancient rhyme. At eight o'clock,  
Or thereabouts, we crossed the bridge of Rosebecq

VAN RYK.

'T was thereabouts, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

Tell me, Van Ryk,  
Was any thing of moment in your thoughts  
As we were crossing.

VAN RYK.

In my thoughts, my lord ?  
Nothing to speak of.

ARTEVELDE.

Well now it is strange !  
I never knew myself to sleep o' horseback,  
And yet I must have slept. The evening's heat  
Had much oppressed me ; then the tedious tract  
Of naked moorland, and the long flat road

And slow straight stream, for ever side by side,  
Like poverty and crime — I'm sure I slept.

VAN RYK.

I saw not that you did, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

I did;

Aye, and dreamed too. 'T was an unwholesome dream,  
If dream it was — a nightmare rather : first  
A stifling pressure compassed in my heart ;  
On my dull ears, with thick and muffled peal,  
Came many a sound of battle and of flight,  
Of tumult and distracted cries ; my own,  
That would have been the loudest, was unheard,  
And seemed to swell the chambers of my brain  
With volume vast of sound I could not utter.  
The screams of wounded horses, and the crash  
Of broken planks, and then the heavy plunge  
Of bodies in the water — they were loud,  
But yet the sound that was confined in me,  
Had it got utterance, would have drowned them all !  
But still it grew and swelled, and therewithal  
The burthen thickened on my heart ; my blood,  
That had been flowing freshly from my wounds,  
Trickled, then clotted, and then flowed no more :  
My horse upon the barrier of the bridge  
Stumbled ; I started ; and was wide awake.  
'T was an unpleasant dream.

VAN RYK.

It was, my lord.

I wonder how I marked not that you slept.



ARTEVELDE.

I must be wakeful now. Who waits? who's there?  
*(To an ATTENDANT who enters.)*  
 The man I sent to Ypres with a letter —  
 Has he returned?

ATTENDANT.

But now, my lord, arrived;  
 And with him Father John.

ARTEVELDE.

He come already!  
 With more alacrity he meets my wish  
 Than I deserve. Prithee, conduct him hither.

ATTENDANT.

He comes, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

Then leave us — No, Van Ryk,  
 Not you; or if you will, lie down within,  
 And rest you till I call.

VAN RYK.

My lord, I will.

*[Exeunt VAN RYK and the ATTENDANT.]*

*Enter FATHER JOHN.*

ARTEVELDE.

My honored master, if a thousand welcomes  
 Could carry more than one, I'd say the word  
 More oft than you your Ave and your creed.  
 But welcome is enough.

FATHER JOHN.

God's love, my son,  
 Be with you alway. We have lately been  
 In outward act more strangers than we were,  
 But inwardly, I fain would hope, unaltered.

ARTEVELDE.

Unaltered, on my soul! The storms of state  
 From time to time heave up some monstrous ridge,  
 Which each from other hides two friendly barks;  
 Nought else divides us, and we steer, I trust,  
 One course, are guided by one steadfast star,  
 That so one anchorage we may reach at last.  
 The cares and mighty troubles of the times  
 Have kept me company, and shut yours out.

FATHER JOHN.

It is your place, my son; private respects  
 Should be far from you — 't is no blame of yours.  
 But whence the present call?

ARTEVELDE.

To that at once.  
 France is in arms; 'the Earl that was of Flanders  
 From Hedin went by Arras to Bapaume  
 On Wednesday se'nnight, if my scouts say true,  
 And there my Lord of Burgundy he met,  
 And with him made a covenant; from thence  
 They went to Senlis, where the young king lies,  
 And there the Dukes of Burgundy and Bourbon  
 Had gathered from all parts a mighty force,  
 Some eighty or a hundred thousand men.  
 May that not startle me?

FATHER JOHN.

'T is a large levy.

But yet you muster more.

ARTEVELDE.

Of men-at-arms

Not half the tale ; and those for Senlis bound  
 Would double — so says fame — those now arrived.  
 It were a vain and profitless attempt  
 To disbelieve my danger, howsoe'er  
 I show a careless aspect to the crowd.  
 If Nicholas le Flamand call not back  
 The French king's force, as much I fear he will not,  
 There's one sufficiency of aid can reach  
 The measure of my need ; one and no more ;  
 And that is aid from England. This not sent,  
 Or else belated, — coming in the dusk  
 And sunset of my fortunes, — where am I ?

FATHER JOHN.

At England's council board in Edward's days  
 Sloth and delay had never seats ; no paper  
 Lay gathering dust and losing its fresh looks,  
 No business lodged : would that it were so now :  
 Yet surely if King Richard deem it meet  
 And useful to his realm to send you aid,  
 'T will come with speed.

ARTEVELDE.

He knows not that despatch

Is now so all-important. Nor from those  
 I sent him, will he learn it. I myself  
 Thought not King Charles had crept so close upon me,

Else had I put your kindness then to proofs  
Which I intend it now, — else had I asked  
Your presence then in England.

FATHER JOHN.

Nay, my son,  
Six have you sent already — on their way  
Our humble hospitality they shared  
At Ypres.

ARTEVELDE.

Then their quality you saw.  
They were the best, methought, that I could spare  
For foreign service, whilst thus pressed at home.  
The first for state and dignity was named;  
He whom Pope Urbayne, after Ghent rebelled,  
Appointed bishop to receive the dues  
Which else had fallen to the See of Tournay,  
Where Clement is acknowledged; for this end  
Was he a bishop made, and to say truth  
He's equal to his function. Next in rank  
Comes our sagacious friend, John Sercolacke;  
None better and none safer in affairs,  
Were it but given to ponder and devise  
Beforehand what at every need to say.  
But should King Richard ask him on the sudden  
What brought him there, confounded will he stand  
Till livelier tongues from emptier heads have spoken;  
Then on the morrow to a tittle know  
What should have been his answer.

FATHER JOHN.

Lois de Vaux  
And master Blondel-Vatre have glib tongues.

## ARTEVELDE.

Than Lois de Vaux there's no man sooner sees  
 Whatever at a glance is visible ;  
 What is not, he can never see at all.  
 Quick-witted is he, versatile, seizing points,  
 But never solving questions ; vain he is —  
 It is his pride to see things on all sides,  
 Which best to do he sets them on their corners.  
 Present before him arguments by scores  
 Bearing diversely on the affair in hand,  
 He'll see them all successively distinctly,  
 Yet never two of them can see together,  
 Or gather, blend, and balance what he sees  
 To make up one account ; a mind it is  
 Accessible to reason's subtlest rays,  
 And many enter there, but none converge ;  
 It is an army with no general,  
 An arch without a key-stone. — Then the other,  
 Good Martin Blondel-Vatre — he is rich  
 In nothing else but difficulties and doubts.  
 You shall be told the evil of your scheme,  
 But not the scheme that's better. He forgets  
 That policy, expecting not clear gain,  
 Deals ever in alternatives. He's wise  
 In negatives, is skilful at erasures,  
 Expert in stepping backwards, an adept  
 At auguring eclipses. But admit  
 His apprehensions and demand, what then ?  
 And you shall find you've turned the blank leaf over

## FATHER JOHN.

Still three are left.

ARTEVELDE.

Three names, and nothing more.  
 To please the towns that gave them birth they're sent,  
 Not for their merits. Verily, Father John,  
 I should not willingly invade your leisure,  
 Or mix you up with my precarious fortunes;  
 But I am as a debtor against whom  
 The writs are out — I'm driven upon my friends;  
 Say, will you stand me?

FATHER JOHN.

With my best of service,  
 Such as it may be. To King Richard's court  
 I will set forth to-morrow.

ARTEVELDE.

Ever kind!  
 The faithfulest as the first of all my friends.  
 Early to-morrow then we'll treat in full  
 The matter of your mission. Now, good night.

FATHER JOHN.

Adieu, till then, and peace be with your slumbers.

[Exit.

ARTEVELDE.

Their hour is yet to come. What ho! Van Ryk!

*Enter VAN RYK.*

You're sure, Van Ryk, it has not yet transpired  
 That I am in the camp?

VAN RYK.

Certain, my lord.

## ARTEVELDE.

Then come with me ; we 'll cast a casual eye  
 On them that keep the watch ; — though sooth to say,  
 I wish my day's work over, — to forget  
 This restless world, and slumber like a babe ;  
 For I am very tired — yea, tired at heart.

## VAN RYK.

Your spirits were wont to bear you up more freshly.  
 If I might speak, my lord, my humble mind,  
 You have not, since your honored lady's death,  
 In such a sovereignty possessed yourself,  
 As you were wont to say that all men should.  
 Your thoughts have been more inwardly directed,  
 And led by fancies : should I be too bold  
 And let my duty lag behind my love,  
 To put you thus in mind, I crave your pardon.

## ARTEVELDE.

That was a loss, Van Ryk ; that was a loss.  
 The love betwixt us was not as the flush  
 And momentary kindling in warm youth ;  
 But marriage and what term of time was given  
 Brought hourly increase to our common store.  
 Well — I am now the sport of circumstance,  
 Driven from my anchorage ; — yet deem not thou  
 That I my soul surrender to the past,  
 In chains and bondage ; — that it is not so,  
 Bear witness for me long and busy days,  
 Which jostling and importunate affairs  
 So push and elbow, they but seldom leave  
 Shy midnight uninvaded. No, Van Ryk ;

At eve returning wearied to my tent,  
 If sometimes I may seem to stray in thought,  
 Seeking what is not there, the mood is brief,  
 The operative function within call,  
 Nor know I that for any little hour  
 The weal of Flanders (if I may presume  
 To hook it on my hours) is yielded up  
 To idle thought, or vacant retrospect.  
 But now this body, exigent of rest,  
 Will needs put in a claim. One round we'll take,  
 And then to bed.

VAN RYK.

My lord, you must be tired.  
 I am too bold to trouble you so late  
 With my unprofitable talk.

ARTEVELDE.

Not so ;  
 Your talk is always welcome. There within  
 You'll find a wardrobe, with some varlets' cloaks  
 For use at need ; take one about yourself,  
 And meet me with another at the gate.

[*Exit* VAN RYK.]

A serviceable, faithful, thoughtful friend,  
 Is old Van Ryk, and of a humble nature,  
 And yet with faculties and gifts of sense,  
 Which place him justly on no lowly level —  
 Why should I say a lowlier than mine own,  
 Or otherwise than as an equal use him ?  
 That with familiarity respect  
 Doth slacken, is a word of common use.  
 I never found it so.

[*Exit.*



## ACT II.

## SCENE I.

THE INTERIOR OF THE STATE PAVILION.

VAN ARTEVELDE seated at the head of his Council, with Attendants. The FRENCH HERALD and SIR FLEUREANT of HEURLÉE. ARTEVELDE rises to receive the HERALD and reseats himself.

ARTEVELDE.

France, I perceive, Sir Herald, owns at length  
The laws of polity and civil use,  
A recognition which I hardly hoped ;  
For when the messenger that late I sent  
In amity, with friendly missives charged,  
Was sent to prison, I deemed some barbarous tribe,  
That knew no usages of Christian lands,  
Had dispossessed you and usurped the realm.

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lord, you have your messenger again.

ARTEVELDE.

Aye Sir, but not through courtesy I think,  
Nor yet through love.

(To the HERALD.)

Sir, you have leave to speak.

## HERALD.

My lord, I humbly thank you. I entreat  
 That in my speech should aught offend your ears,  
 You from the utterer will remove the fault.  
 My office I obey and not my will,  
 Nor is a word that I'm to speak mine own.

## ARTEVELDE.

Sir, nothing you can say shall be so gross,  
 Offensive, or unmannerly conceived,  
 As that it shall not credibly appear  
 To come from them that sent you; speak, then, freely.

## HERALD.

Philip of Artevelde, sole son of Jacques,  
 Maltster and brewer in the town of Ghent,  
 The realm of France this unto thee delivers :  
 That forasmuch as thou, a liegeman born  
 To the Earl of Flanders, hast rebelled against him,  
 And with thy manifold treasons and contempts  
 Of duty and allegiance, hast drawn in  
 By twenties and by forties his good towns  
 To rise in fury and forget themselves, —  
 Thus saith the puissant and mighty lord,  
 The Earl's affectionate kinsman, Charles of France :  
 Thou from before this town of Oudenarde  
 With all thy host shalt vanish like a mist ;  
 Thou shalt surrender to their rightful lord  
 The towns of Ghent, and Ypres, Cassel, Bruges,  
 Of Thorout, Rousselart, Damme, Sluys, and Bergues,  
 Of Harlebecque, Poperinguen, Dendermonde,  
 Alost and Grammont ; and with them all towns

Of lesser name, all castles and strong houses,  
 Shalt thou deliver up before the Feast  
 Of Corpus Christi coming, which undone  
 He the said puissant king, Sir Charles of France,  
 With all attendance of his chivalry,  
 Will raise his banner and his kingdom's force,  
 And scattering that vile people which thou lead'st,  
 Will hang thee on a tree and nail thy head  
 Over the gates of Ghent the mother of ill  
 That spawned thee ; and for these and sundry more  
 Just reasons and sufficient, thou art warned  
 To make thy peace betimes, and so God help thee !

## ARTEVELDE.

Sir Herald, thou hast well discharged thyself  
 Of an ill function. Take these links of gold  
 And with the company of words I give thee  
 Back to the braggart king from whom thou cam'st.  
 First, of my father : — had he lived to know  
 His glories, deeds, and dignities postponed  
 To names of barons, earls, and counts (that here  
 Are to men's ears importunately common  
 As chimes to dwellers in the market-place)  
 He with a silent and a bitter mirth  
 Had listened to the boast : may he his son  
 Pardon for in comparison setting forth  
 With his the name of this disconsolate Earl.  
 How stand they in the title-deeds of fame ?  
 What hold and heritage in distant times  
 Doth each enjoy — what posthumous possession ?  
 The dusty chronicler with painful search,  
 Long fingering forgotten scrolls, indites

That Louis Mâle was sometime Earl of Flanders,  
 That Louis Mâle his sometime earldom lost,  
 Through wrongs by him committed, that he lived  
 An outcast long in dole not undeserved,  
 And died dependent: there the history ends,  
 And who of them that hear it wastes a thought  
 On the unfriended fate of Louis Mâle?  
 But turn the page and look we for the tale  
 Of Artevelde's renown. What man was this?  
 He humbly born, he highly gifted rose  
 By steps of various enterprise, by skill,  
 By native vigor to wide sway, and took,  
 What his vain rival having could not keep.  
 His glory shall not cease, though cloth of gold  
 Wrap him no more, for not of golden cloth,  
 Nor fur, nor miniver, his greatness came,  
 Whose fortunes were inborn: strip me the two,  
 This were the humblest, that the noblest, beggar  
 That ever braved a storm!

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lord, your pardon;  
 Nothing was uttered in disparagement  
 Of your famed father, though a longer life  
 And better would he assuredly have lived,  
 Had it seemed good to him to follow forth  
 His former craft, nor turn aside to brew  
 These frothy insurrections.

ARTEVELDE.

Sir, your back  
 Shows me no tabard, nor a sign beside,

Denoting what your office is that asks  
A hearing in this presence ; nor know I yet  
By what so friendly fortune I am graced  
With your good company and gentle speech.  
But we are here no niggards of respect  
To merit's unauthenticated forms,  
And therefore do I answer you, and thus :  
You speak of insurrections : bear in mind  
Against what rule my father and myself  
Have been insurgent ; whom did we supplant ? —  
There was a time, so ancient records tell,  
There were communities, scarce known by name  
In these degenerate days, but once far famed,  
Where liberty and justice, hand in hand,  
Ordered the common weal ; where great men grew  
Up to their natural eminence, and none,  
Saving the wise, just, eloquent, were great ;  
Where power was of God's gift, to whom he gave  
Supremacy of merit, the sole means  
And broad highway to power, that ever then  
Was meritoriously administered,  
Whilst all its instruments from first to last,  
The tools of state for service high or low,  
Were chosen for their aptness to those ends  
Which virtue meditates. To shake the ground  
Deep-founded whereupon this structure stood,  
Was verily a crime ; a treason it was,  
Conspiracies to hatch against this state  
And its free innocence. But now, I ask,  
Where is there on God's earth that polity  
Which it is not, by consequence converse,

A treason against nature to uphold ?  
Whom may we now call free ? whom great ? whom  
wise ?

Whom innocent ? — the free are only they  
Whom power makes free to execute all ills  
Their hearts imagine ; they are only great  
Whose passions nurse them from their cradles up  
In luxury and lewdness, — whom to see  
Is to despise, whose aspects put to scorn  
Their station's eminence ; the wise, they only  
Who wait obscurely till the bolts of heaven  
Shall break upon the land, and give them light  
Whereby to walk ; the innocent, alas !  
Poor innocency lies where four roads meet,  
A stone upon her head, a stake driven through her,  
For who is innocent that cares to live ?  
The hand of power doth press the very life  
Of innocency out ! What then remains  
But in the cause of nature to stand forth,  
And turn this frame of things the right side up ?  
For this the hour is come, the sword is drawn,  
And tell your masters vainly they resist.  
Nature, that slept beneath their poisonous drugs,  
Is up and stirring, and from north and south,  
From east and west, from England and from France,  
From Germany, and Flanders, and Navarre,  
Shall stand against them like a beast at bay.  
The blood that they have shed will hide no longer  
In the blood-sloken soil, but cries to heaven.  
Their cruelties and wrongs against the poor  
Shall quicken into swarms of venomous snakes,

And hiss through all the earth, till o'er the earth,  
 That ceases then from hissings and from groans,  
 Rises the song — How are the mighty fallen !  
 And by the peasant's hand ! Low lie the proud !  
 And smitten with the weapons of the poor —  
 The blacksmith's hammer and the woodman's axe.  
 Their tale is told ; and for that they were rich,  
 And robbed the poor ; and for that they were strong,  
 And scourged the weak ; and for that they made laws  
 Which turned the sweat of labor's brow to blood, —  
 For these their sins the nations cast them out,  
 The dunghills are their death-beds, and the stench  
 From their uncovered carrion steaming wide,  
 Turns in the nostrils of enfranchised man  
 To a sweet savour. These things come to pass  
 From small beginnings, because God is just.

## SIR FLEUREANT.

Sir, you are bold in prophecy, but words  
 Will not demolish kingdoms. This alone  
 Is clear, that we are charged to carry back  
 A warlike answer.

## ARTEVELDE.

You have caught my sense.  
 Let no more words be wasted. What I said  
 Shall be engrossed, and rendered to your hands  
 To spare your memories ; and so farewell  
 Unto your functions. For yourselves, I pray you  
 To grace our table with your company  
 At dinner time, and taste of what we have.  
 Meantime farewell. And yet, my honored friends

And councillors, I bid you to the board.  
 Adieu till then. Good father, by your leave  
 I will detain you.

*(The council breaks up. The HERALD and SIR  
 FLEUREANT are conducted out, and only VAN  
 ARTEVELDE and FATHER JOHN remain. After  
 a pause ARTEVELDE proceeds.)*

Did I say too much?  
 What think you? was I rash?

FATHER JOHN.

My son, my son!  
 You've spoken some irrevocable words,  
 And more, in my weak judgment, than were wise.  
 Till now might accident have opened out  
 A way to concord. Casualties or care  
 Might yet have counselled peace, and was it well  
 To send this challenge?

ARTEVELDE.

Judge me not unheard.  
 We have been too successful to be safe 242  
 In standing still. Things are too far afoot.  
 Being so high as this, to be no higher  
 Were presently to fall. France will not brook  
 To see me as I am, though I should bear  
 My honors ne'er so meekly. With bold words  
 I magnify my strength,—perhaps may dim  
 Their fire-new courage, their advance delay,  
 And raise the spirits of my friends.



FATHER JOHN.

My son,

These are the after-thoughts that reason coins  
To justify excess, and pay the debts  
Of passion's prodigality.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, nay!

Something of passion may have mixed with this,  
Good Father, but I lost not from my thoughts  
The policy I speak of.

FATHER JOHN.

Might I use

The liberty of former days to one  
That's since so much exalted, I would tell  
How it is said abroad that Artevelde  
Is not unaltered since he rose to power;  
Is not unvisited of worldly pride  
And its attendant passions.

ARTEVELDE.

Say they so?

Well, if it be so it is late to mend;  
For self-amendment is a work of time,  
And business will not wait. Such as I am,  
For better or for worse the world must take me,  
For I must hasten on. Perhaps the state  
And royal splendor I affect, is deemed  
A proof of pride, — yet they that these contemn  
Know little of the springs that move mankind.  
'T is but a juvenile philosophy  
That casts such things aside,

Which, be they in themselves or vile or precious,  
 Are means to govern. Or I'm deemed morose,  
 Severe, impatient of what hinders me?  
 Yet think what manner of men are these I rule;  
 What patience might have made of them, reflect.  
 If I be stern or fierce, 't is from strong need  
 And strange provocatives. If (which I own not)  
 I have drunk deeper of ambition's cup,  
 Be it remembered that the cup of love  
 Was wrested from my hand. Enough of this.  
 Ambition has its uses in the scheme  
 Of Providence, whose instrument I am  
 To work some changes in the world or die.  
 This hasty coming of the French disturbs me,  
 And I could wish you gone.

FATHER JOHN.

My horses wait  
 And I am ready. I will bear in mind  
 With the best memory that my years permit,  
 Your charges; and if nothing more remains,  
 God's blessing on your enterprise and you!  
 I go my way.

ARTEVELDE.

So long as lies the Lis  
 Between our hosts, I have the less to fear.  
 Say to King Richard I shall strive to keep  
 The passes of the Lis, and if his aid  
 Find them unforced, his way to France is straight  
 As that to Windsor. I shall guard the Lis  
 With watch as circumspect as seamen keep  
 When in the night the leeward breakers flash.

But if he linger and the Lis be forced,  
 Tell him our days are numbered, and that three  
 Shall close this contest. I am harping still  
 On the same string; but you, my friend revered,  
 Will kindly pardon my solitudes.  
 I keep you now no longer; fare you well;  
 And may we meet again and meet in joy!  
 God grant it! fare you well.

FATHER JOHN

My horses, ho!

ARTEVELDE.

Let me attend you.

[*Exeunt*]

## SCENE II.

A PLATFORM NEAR ARTEVELDE'S PAVILION.

VAN MUCK *is seated at some distance in the back-ground*  
*Enter SIR FLEUREANT and the HERALD.*

SIR FLEUREANT.

Then be it as I said: the sun shall set  
 'Twixt seven and eight; ere then I'll know my cours  
 And if the regent lend a willing ear  
 To the duke's message, and this lady send  
 Upon his summons, merrily we go  
 Together, and who meets us on the road  
 Shall say, a goodly company, God bless them!  
 A man, a woman, and a pursuivant.  
 But 't will not be so.

HERALD.

Let us hope it may.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Assure yourself 't will otherwise befall.  
 He will retain her, or herself hold back.  
 Then shall it be your prudence to depart  
 With your best speed, whilst I invent a cause  
 For lingering. I will not take my answer,  
 But spin the matter of my mission out  
 Into such length as with that web to hide  
 My underworkings. Be you gone from Flanders  
 Fast as you may and far, when this falls out,  
 And you shall tell the duke with what good will  
 I hazard in his service loss of all  
 I have to lose, — my life.

HERALD.

Loath should I be  
 To leave you so, but it were vain for me  
 To share your risk, who cannot aid your end.

SIR FLEUREANT (*discovering VAN MUCK*).

Whom have we here? a listener? God forbid!  
 And yet he seems attentive, and his ears  
 Are easy of approach, the covered way,  
 Scarp, counterscarp, and parapet, is rased.  
 Holloa, Sir, are you there! Give you good-day!  
 What think you we were saying?

VAN MUCK.

I'm hard of hearing, Sir, I ask your pardon.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Oh! we can pardon that; what, deaf — stone-deaf?

VAN MUCK.

No, Sir, thank God! no deafer than yourself,  
But slowish, Sir, of hearing.

SIR FLEUREANT.

What, snail-slow?

VAN MUCK.

No, Sir, no slower than another man,  
But not so quick of hearing, Sir, as some,  
Being a little deaf.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Content thee, friend;  
Thine ears are sharper than thine apprehension.  
But wherefore want they flaps? who docked them thus?

VAN MUCK.

It is no trouble nor no loss to you,  
Whoever did it.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Pardon me, my friend,  
It troubles me, and doth offend mine eyes,  
To see thee lack those handles to thy head.  
Tell me who snipped them?

VAN MUCK.

'T was my lord, the regent.

SIR FLEUREANT.

The regent? (*To the HERALD.*) Upon this I go to  
work.  
The regent? and you wait upon him here?

VAN MUCK.

I wait to ask him for my company :  
I was the captain of a company.

HERALD.

What, took he thy command away besides ?

VAN MUCK.

Yea, Sir.

HERALD.

And wherefore ? what was thy offence ?

VAN MUCK.

I was a little mastered, Sir, with drink,  
The night we carried Yerkin, and a maid  
That ran upon me, Sir, I know not how,  
Forswore herself, and said I forced her will.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Well.

VAN MUCK.

And 't was this that lost me my command.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Impossible ! I 've done as much myself  
A thousand times.

VAN MUCK.

'T was nothing, Sir, but this.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Oh, monstrous ! and you ask him to replace you ?

VAN MUCK.

Yea, Sir, to give me my command again.

SIR FLEUREANT.

And wilt thou ask him to replace thine ears?

VAN MUCK.

No, Sir.

SIR FLEUREANT.

You 'd best; for you'll succeed as soon.  
I've heard that never did he change his mind  
But once, since he was regent; once he did;  
'T was when he kindly pardoned Peter Shultz.  
He changed his mind and hung him.

VAN MUCK.

By our lady!

I would not ask him if I knew for certain  
He would deny me.

SIR FLEUREANT.

What, deny thee? hang thee.  
Take service with another lord — leave him;  
Thou hast been foully dealt with. Never hope  
To conquer pride with humbleness, but turn  
To them that will be proud to use thee well.  
I'll show thee many such, and to begin,  
Here is myself. What lack'st thou? money? See —  
I am provided: hold me forth thy hand;  
'The regent left thee hands; was that his skill?  
243 { 'The injury that disables is more wise  
{ Than that which stings — a hand he left to take —  
And here's to fill it — and a hand to strike —  
Look not amazed, I ask thee not to lift it;  
I ask thee but to carry me a letter  
As far as Bruges.

VAN MUCK.

Sir, I'll be bound to do it.

SIR FLEUREANT.

And are there many men besides thyself  
That have lost rank and service in the camp?

VAN MUCK.

It was but yesterday two constables  
Had their discharge.

SIR FLEUREANT.

And why were *they* dismissed?

VAN MUCK.

'T was by the regent's orders; 't was, he said,  
Because they made more riots in the camp  
Than they prevented.

SIR FLEUREANT.

He is hard to please.

What are they called?

VAN MUCK.

Jan Bulsen and Carl Kortz.

*(Trumpets are heard at a little distance.)*

HERALD.

Hark to the regent's trumpets.

VAN MUCK.

He has finished

His daily rounds, and will be here anon.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Name me a place of meeting.



VAN MUCK.

The west dyke,  
Behind the sutler Merlick's tent.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Do thou  
And Kortz, and Bulsen, at the hour of nine,  
Be there to take my orders. Get thee gone,  
And be not seen till then. Go this way out,  
That so the regent meet thee not.

[*Exit VAN MUCK.*

That seed  
Is sown, but whether I shall reap the fruits,  
Is yet in Artevelde's abitrement.  
Let him comply, and those three hens shall meet  
To hatch an addle egg.

HERALD.

'T is more than time  
That I were fairly on the road to France.  
You 're pushing on apace.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Our thrift lies there.  
Spare time, spend gold, and so you win the day!

'For strongest castle, tower, and town,  
The golden bullet beateth down!'

(*Trumpets again.*)

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE.*

ARTEVELDE.

You are equipped, I see, for taking horse ;

I pray you have Sir Charles of France informed  
It was your diligence with such speed dismissed you,  
And not my lack of hospitality.

HERALD.

My lord, we surely shall report in France  
That we were well and bounteously entreated.  
Thankfully now, my lord, I take my leave ;  
Sir Fleureant follows, and ere night will reach  
The hostel where we rest.

[*Exit* HERALD.]

ARTEVELDE.

You are not, I will hope, so much in haste ?

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lord, I tarry but an hour behind,  
And not for idleness. My lord, I'm charged  
With a strange mission, as to you 't will seem,  
But of great moment, from his grace of Bourbon.

ARTEVELDE.

Sir, I attend ; his grace has all my ears.  
What would he ?

SIR FLEUREANT.

He has voices more than ten  
In the king's council ; and as they may speak  
Touching this war, 't will likely be resolved.  
Now he is not implacably, as some,  
Evenomed, and if justice were but done him  
He might be pacified, and turn the course  
Of these precipitate counsels.

ARTEVELDE.

By mine honor,  
 If there be justice I can render him,  
 He should receive it from my ready hands,  
 Although his voice in council were as small  
 As a dog-whistle. What may be his grief?

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lord, he sent you letters that portrayed  
 His grief in all its blackness. To be short,  
 He wants his paramour; the damsel fair  
 Whom you surprised, sojourning at the court  
 Of Louis Mâle, the day that Bruges was taken.

ARTEVELDE.

Sir, he's thrice welcome to his paramour;  
 I never have withheld her.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Then to me,  
 A servant of the prince, 't is his desire  
 She be consigned, to take her to the palace  
 At Senlis.

ARTEVELDE.

To the hands of whom she will  
 I yield the lady, to go where she will,  
 Were it to the palace of the prince of darkness.  
 But at the lady's bidding it must be,  
 Not at the prince's.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Do I learn from this  
 The lady is reluctant?

ARTEVELDE.

By no means.

The dangers of the journey have deterred her  
 From taking my safe-conduct heretofore,  
 When, at the instance of the Duke of Bourbon,  
 I offered it ; but, having come thus far  
 Towards the frontier, she may travel hence  
 In your protection safely.

SIR FLEUREANT.

May I learn

Her pleasure from herself?

ARTEVELDE.

I'll name your wish

To see her, and she doubtless will comply.

Attendance here !

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

Inform the foreign lady,  
 That with her leave, at her convenient leisure,  
 I will entreat admittance for some words  
 Of brief discourse.

[*Exit ATTENDANT.*

We'll walk towards her tent,  
 If that's your pleasure.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Still at your command.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III.

A PAVILION RICHLY HUNG AND FURNISHED.

*ELENA and her attendant CECILE.*

ELENA.

Art thou not weary of the camp, Cecile ?

CECILE.

Oh no, my lady, it is always stirring ;  
 There is good sport upon the market-days,  
 And women are much made of.

ELENA.

Well, I am.

Or rather I am weary of myself,  
 And carry dulness with me as the wind  
 Carries the cloud, and wheresoe'er I go,  
 An atmosphere of darkness and of storm  
 Girdles me round. I wish that I were dead.

CECILE

For shame, my lady ! you that are so young  
 And beautiful, with all the world before you :  
 It is a sin to be so discontent.

ELENA.

Give me my lute, and I will answer that.

*(She sings.)*

Down lay in a nook my lady's brach,  
 And said my feet are sore,  
 I cannot follow with the pack  
 A hunting of the boar.

And though the horn sounds never so clear  
 With the hounds in loud uproar,  
 Yet I must stop and lie down here,  
 Because my feet are sore.

The huntsman when he heard the same,  
 What answer did he give?  
 The dog that 's lame is much to blame,  
 He is not fit to live.

Lo! some one comes.

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

ATTENDANT.

The regent, Madam, would attend your leisure  
 For some few moments' private conversation,  
 If it might please you to admit him.

ELENA.

Surely;

Acquaint him that I wait upon his pleasure.

*[Exit Attendant.]*

What can he want! he never asked before  
 To speak with me in private. It is strange;  
 But it will end in nothing. Go, Cecile.  
 Stop; I've forgotten if my hair was dressed  
 This morning; put it right. Look, here he comes;  
 But there's one with him — said he not alone  
 He wished to see me? I will go within  
 And thou canst say that I expect him there.

*[Exit.]*

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE and SIR FLEUREANT.*

CECILE (*addressing the former*).

My lady waits your pleasure, Sir, within.

(*VAN ARTEVELDE passes into the inner apartment.*)

Your servant, Sir; would you too see my mistress?

SIR FLEUREANT.

If it so please your master.

CECILE.

Who's my master?

SIR FLEUREANT.

I cry you mercy, is it not the regent?

CECILE.

The regent is no master, Sir, of mine.

SIR FLEUREANT.

No?

CECILE.

By no means.

SIR FLEUREANT.

But he is often here?

CECILE.

No oftener than it pleases him to come  
And her to see him.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Which is twice a-day.

CECILE.

Who told you that?

SIR FLEUREANT.

A cupid that brake loose  
From the close service he was sent upon,  
Which was to watch their meetings.

CECILE.

Said he so?  
The runaway! he told you such a lie!

SIR FLEUREANT.

Nay, but he had it from yourself.

CECILE.

My God!  
He told you such another!

SIR FLEUREANT.

And the truth?

CECILE.

The well is not so deep but you may see it.  
The regent sometimes at the close of day  
Has fits of lowness, and is wearied much  
With galloping so long from post to post,  
And this and that and t'other — then my lady  
Is skilled in minstrelsy, and hath a voice  
That whoso hears feels for the while no touch  
Of pain or weariness or troubled thoughts,  
But following in the train of melody  
To that seductive sequence of sweet sounds  
Tunes his attentive mind.

SIR FLEUREANT.

She sings him songs.



CECILE.

'T is nothing less than so.

SIR FLEUREANT.

The livelong night?

CECILE.

An hour or two, no more.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Which being past —

CECILE.

Which being past, he wishes her good rest  
And so departs.

SIR FLEUREANT.

And all the while he's there  
Are you there too?

CECILE.

Never an instant gone.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Will you swear that?

CECILE.

Assuredly I will.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Or any thing beside.

CECILE.

I crave your pardon ;  
I would not swear that you had learnt good manners  
That you 'd been whipped as often as need was  
In breeding of you up, I would not swear ;

I would not swear that what you wanted then  
Has not been since made good ; I would not swear —

SIR FLEUREANT.

Quarter, quarter ! — truce to your would not swearing !  
Here is the regent.

*Enter ARTEVELDE with ELENA.*

ARTEVELDE.

Sir Fleureant, I have pled in your behalf  
And gained you audience ; for the rest, your trust  
Is in your eloquence.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Alas ! my lord,  
In nothing better ? I had placed my trust  
Not in the eloquence of rugged man,  
But woman's fair fidelity.

ELENA.

Sir knight,  
I will not task your tongue for eloquence,  
Though it be ne'er so ready.

ARTEVELDE.

I am here  
But an intruder. I will say no more,  
Save that the lady's choice, be what it may,  
Commands my utmost means and best good-will.

[*Exit.*]

ELENA.

Stay, stay, Cecile ; you will attend me here.  
You come, Sir, from my lord the Duke of Bourbon ;

And why you come I partly can collect  
 From what the regent spake. The duke's desire  
 Is that I join him presently in France.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Such is his — what? — his madness had I called it  
 Before I saw you, — but I call it now  
 Only his bitter fate, that nothing gay  
 In palaces or courts can win him off  
 From thoughts of you, that nothing high or great  
 In policy or war has power to move him,  
 Nothing which fame awaits, ambition woos,  
 Whilst you are absent entertains his mind.

ELENA.

I'm sorry if my absence vex the duke,  
 Sorry if it offend him.

SIR FLEUREANT.

'T is a grief

More cutting as anticipated less;  
 For though the tie had not the church's sanction,  
 He had not deemed it therefore less secure.  
 Such faith was his in what he thought was faith  
 In her he loved, that all the world's traditions  
 Of woman's hollow words and treacherous wiles  
 Could not dissuade him from his fast belief.  
 Moreover he has proffered deeds of gift  
 As ample as the dowry of a duchess,  
 Would you but meet his wishes and return  
 But for a day, and should you find thenceforth  
 Just cause of discontent, with this rich freight  
 Might you depart as freely as before.

ELENA.

The duke has been most liberal of his offers,  
 And I have said I'm sorry to fall out  
 With what his grace desires — that is not all —  
 His grace has been as liberal of reproaches ;  
 But what, then, is his grief? Alas! alas!  
 The world's traditions may be true that speak  
 Of woman's infidelities and wiles,  
 But truer far that scripture is which saith  
 'Put not your trust in princes.'

SIR FLEUREANT.

This is strange!  
 And would amaze him much. In what, I pray,  
 Has he deceived you?

ELENA.

Men, Sir, think it little ;  
 'Tis less than little in a prince's judgment ;  
 In woman's estimation it is much.

SIR FLEUREANT.

I would entreat you to explain it farther.

ELENA.

So I design : thus tell the duke from me :  
 I could have loved him once — not with the heat  
 Of that affection which himself conceived —  
 (For this poor heart had prodigally spent  
 Its fund of youthful passion ere we met) —  
 But with a reasonably warm regard.  
 This could I have bestowed for many a year,  
 And did bestow at first, and all went well.

But soon the venomous world wherein we lived  
 Assailed the prince with jocular remark  
 And question keen, importing that his soul  
 Was yoked in soft subjection to a woman :  
 And were she of good life and conversation,  
 Insidious slanderers said, 't were not so strange,  
 But he is vanquished by his paramour !  
 So the word went, and as it reached his ear  
 From time to time repeated, he grew cold,  
 Captious, suspicious, full of slights and cavils,  
 Asserting his supremacy in words  
 Of needless contradiction. This I bore  
 Though not by such sad change unalienate ;  
 But presently there came to me reports,  
 Authentic though malignant, of loose gibes  
 Let fall among his retinue, whereby  
 His grace, to keep his wit in good repute  
 For shrewdness, and to boast his liberty,  
 Had shamefully belied his own belief—  
 For firm belief he had — that I was chaste.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Oh mischief! you gave credence to such tales!

ELENA.

This which I speak of carry to the duke ;  
 'T is therefore I relate it — he well knows  
 If it be true or false. Say further this :  
 Finding his grace thus pitiably weak,  
 Alternate slave of vanity and love,  
 I from that moment in my heart resolved  
 To break the link that bound us : to this end

I parted from his company at Bruges,  
And by the same abiding, I have made  
This free deliverance of my mind to you.  
Which task fulfilled, (I 'm sorry from my soul,  
If it offend,) I wish you, Sir, farewell.

[*Exit, CECILE following.*]

## SIR FLEUREANT.

'T is a magnanimous harlot! By my faith  
Of all the queans that on my humble head  
Have poured the vials of their wrath and scorn,  
This is the prettiest, and, I think, the proudest.  
If one might bolt the bran from her discourse  
I should take leave to guess her firm resolve  
Was not fast clenched till Artevelde took Bruges.  
Whichever way it be, my path is plain  
Though slippery, and forth I go upon it.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.

NIGHT. — A DINGLE IN THE OUTSKIRTS OF THE CAMP,  
BEHIND A SUTLER'S TENT.

VAN KORTZ, *to whom enter* VAN MUCK.

VAN KORTZ.

Who's there — Van Muck? holloa you, boy! what speed?

VAN MUCK.

Hush, hush! speak low; is no one here but you?

VAN KORTZ.

No jolly soul beside.

VAN MUCK.

Has the watch past?

VAN KORTZ.

By my permission, yes. I drew a shaft  
Chock to the steel, and from behind this tree  
Aimed it at Serjeant Laubscher's black old heart,  
In quittance of an ancient debt I owe him;  
But pooh! I let him pass.

VAN MUCK.

Why, were you mad?

It would have baulked our meeting.

VAN KORTZ.

What care I?

VAN MUCK.

It is a matter of five hundred merks  
White money down.

VAN KORTZ.

Aye, let me see it down,  
And I 'll believe you.

VAN MUCK.

He will soon be here,  
And then you 'll — here he is — no, 't is but BULSEN.

*Enter BULSEN.*

BULSEN.

Well, is all right? 't is close upon the hour.

VAN KORTZ.

Nothing is stirring; stand from out the trees  
That he may see us, lest he miss the spot.  
Art certain that he 'll bring the money here?

VAN MUCK.

I saw it in his hands; doubtless he 'll bring it.

VAN KORTZ.

Why, hark ye then — what need to go to Ghent,  
Or Bruges, or Ypres, to get gold that 's here?

VAN MUCK.

He gives it us for taking letters hence,  
To Ghent, and Bruges, and Ypres.



VAN KORTZ.

Hold thy peace,  
 Thou nick-ear'd lubber ; what have we to do  
 With whys and wherefores ? Here he brings the gold,  
 And hence he takes it not, if we be men.  
 What say ye ?

BULSEN.

Cut his throat !

VAN MUCK.

How now ! how now !  
 I would not for the world.

VAN KORTZ.

Pluck up thy heart ;  
 Hast courage but for half a sin ? As good  
 To eat the devil as the broth he 's boiled in.

VAN MUCK.

For mercy's sake do nothing to molest him !  
 'T was I that brought him here, and God he knows  
 I did not go about to take his life.

VAN KORTZ.

Why, go thy way then ; two like me and Bulsen  
 Are men enough.

BULSEN.

Enough to win the booty,  
 And by that token, friend, enough to share it.

VAN KORTZ.

Go to the devil with thy dolorous cheer ;  
 There is no manhood in thee. Get thee gone,

Or I shall try six inches of my knife  
On thine own inneats first.

BULSEN.

Thou 'dst best be gone ;  
Thou art but in the way.

VAN KORTZ.

Go, pudding-heart !  
Take thy huge offal and white liver hence,  
Or in a twinkling of this true-blue steel  
I shall be butching thee from nape to rump.

BULSEN.

Go thou thy ways, and thank thy prosperous stars  
Thou art let live.

VAN MUCK.

I am rewarded bravely  
For bringing this about ; but ye shall see  
If it be better for you.

BULSEN.

Hold, come back —  
What, fast and loose — is that your game ? — soho !  
I see him coming.

SIR FLEUREANT (*without*).

Soft ! was that the tent  
He spoke of ? surely then — or — nay, I know not —  
Where am I going ?

VAN KORTZ.

Come along, Sir, come —  
Where art thou going ? — I will tell the where, —

Going to grass, Sir Fleureant of Heurlée,  
With thy teeth upward. May that servê thy turn?  
Holloa, then, come along!

BULSEN.

Beware, beware!  
Thou art the noisiest of all the cut-throats;  
Will nothing stop thy tongue? This way, Sir, here.

*Enter SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.*

VAN MUCK (*passing between SIR FLEUREANT and the others*).

Your sword, Sir Fleureant! stand upon your guard;  
We are not safe — there oft are men about  
At such dark hours as this, that might surprise us —  
Look to your guard — but we shall be a match  
For more than one such.

BULSEN.

Never fear, Van Muck;  
If any such should break upon our meeting  
We'd parley with them first, and see what good  
Might come of fighting or of speaking fair.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Where is the danger? you are dreaming, friends!  
Let me explain the matter I've in hand.

VAN KORTZ.

Come, come, Sir Hurly-Burly! where's your metal?  
Write us the matter down in white and yellow.  
No danger! but I say there shall be danger —  
Out with this money — what if the regent knew —

Are men like us to be entrapped and sold,  
 And see no money down, Sir Hurly-Burly ?  
 You are a knight, and we are vile cross-bow-men,  
 But steel is steel, and flesh is still but flesh,  
 So let us see your dirt-bags.

SIR FLEUREANT (to VAN MUCK).

Sure he 's drunk !  
 Why brought you me a drunken knave like this ?

VAN MUCK.

He is not drunk, Sir, better that he were !  
 If they are for foul play, so am not I,  
 Nor did I mean it.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Aye, is that their game ?  
 Sirs, ye mistook our honest friend, Van Muck ;  
 I could not in hard money bring you here  
 More than a moiety of the sums you 'll earn  
 By carrying of my letters ; it is thus :  
 So much I 'll pay you now, and as much more  
 You will receive in France from Hetz St. Croix,  
 King Charles's master of accompt. The king  
 Gave orders for the payments.

BULSEN.

It is well ;  
 We will convey your letters, Sir, with speed.

VAN KORTZ.

We 'll trust to meet you afterward at court  
 To see us justly paid.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Enquire for me  
 When you arrive at Senlis or at Lisle,  
 Or wheresoe'er the court may then abide.  
 Here are the letters and the skins of gold  
 I give with each. The word is now 'Despatch!'  
 Speak not, nor eat nor drink with friend or foe,  
 But each man take his wallet on his back,  
 And steal away. No lack of Frenchmen's friends  
 You'll find at Bruges or Ypres, and these letters  
 Will bring you to their knowledge; and at Ghent  
 Though France may find less favor with the many,  
 Still there are some that will befriend you. Hence!  
 What noise is that?

VAN MUCK.

It is the second watch.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Away then;—fare you well.

[*Exeunt VAN MUCK, KORTZ, and BULSEN.*

Now if one miscreant of the three play false  
 This head is worth the value of a potsherd.  
 Speed is my best safe-conduct, then, to France.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

THE PAVILION, AS IN SCENE III. OF ACT II.

ARTEVELDE *and* ELENA. *CECILE attending in the back ground.*

ELENA.

On your way hither, then, you passed through Ghent,  
The city which you saved. How sweet a pleasure,  
Revisiting a place which owes to you  
All that it hath of glory or of ease!

ARTEVELDE.

Verily yes, it should have overjoyed me.  
How diverse, how contrarious is man!  
I know not wherefore, but I scarce was pleased  
To see that town, now wallowing in wealth,  
Which last I saw, and saw with hearty courage,  
Pinched like a beggar wintering at death's door.  
Now, both the mart was full, and church; road, bridge,  
River, and street, were populous and busy,  
And money bags were tossed from hand to hand  
Of men more thriftless than a miser's heir.  
I liked it not; my task, it seemed, was done;  
The arrow sped, the bow unbent, the cord  
Soundless and slack. I came away ill pleased.

ELENA.

Perhaps you suffered losses in the siege?

## ARTEVELDE.

Not in the siege : but I have suffered something.  
 There is a gate in Ghent — I passed beside it —  
 A threshold there, worn of my frequent feet,  
 Which I shall cross no more. But wherefore thus  
 Divert me from the topics I pursue ?  
 Think once again upon the proffered choice  
 Of French protection. Though my army wear  
 This hour an aspect of security,  
 A battle must be fought ere many days.

## ELENA.

You have been very kind to me, my lord,  
 And in the bounty of your noble nature,  
 Despite those ineradicable stains  
 That streak my life, have used me with respect.  
 I will not quit your camp, unless you wish it.

## ARTEVELDE.

Am I in life's embellishments so rich,  
 In pleasures so redundant, as to wish  
 The chiefest one away ? No, fairest friend ;  
 Mine eyes have travelled this horizon round,  
 Ending where they began ; and they have roved  
 The boundless empyrean up and down,  
 And 'mid the undistinguished tumbling host  
 Of the black clouds, have lighted on a soft  
 And solitary spot of azure sky,  
 Whereon they love to dwell. The clouds close in,  
 And soon may shut it from my searching sight ;  
 But let me still behold it whilst I may.

ELENA.

You are so busy all day long, I feared  
A woman's company and trifling talk  
Would only importune you.

ARTEVELDE.

'Think not so.

The sweets of converse and society  
Are sweetest when they're snatched; the often-comer,  
The boon companion of a thousand feasts,  
Whose eye has grown familiar with the fair,  
Whose tutored tongue, by practice perfect made,  
Is tamely talkative, — he never knows  
That truest, rarest light of social joy,  
Which gleams upon the man of many cares.

ELENA.

It is not every one could push aside  
A country's weight so lightly.

ARTEVELDE.

By your leave,  
There are but few that on so grave a theme  
Continuously could ponder unrelieved.  
The heart of man, walk it which way it will,  
Sequestered or frequented, smooth or rough,  
Down the deep valley amongst tinkling flocks,  
Or 'mid the clang of trumpets and the march  
Of clattering ordnance, still must have its halt,  
Its hour of truce, its instant of repose,  
Its inn of rest; and craving still must seek  
The food of its affections — still must slake  
Its constant thirst of what is fresh and pure,  
And pleasant to behold.



ELENA.

To you that thirst,  
 Despite inebriating draughts of glory,  
 Despite ambition, power, and strife, remains;  
 But great men mostly lose the taste of joy,  
 Save from such things as make their greatness greater,  
 Which, growing still, o'ershadows more and more  
 Of less enjoyments, until all are sunk  
 In business of the state.

ARTEVELDE.

'T is otherwise,  
 And ever was with me. It was not meant  
 By him who on the back the burthen bound,  
 That cares, though public, critical, and grave,  
 Should so encase us and encrust, as shuts  
 The gate on what is beautiful below,  
 And clogs those entries of the soul of man  
 Which lead the way to what he hath of heaven :  
 This was not meant, and me may not befall  
 Whilst thou remind'st me of those heavenly joys  
 I once possessed in peace. Life — life, my friend,  
 May hold a not unornamented course  
 Wherever it shall flow ; be the bed rocky,  
 Yet are there flowers, and none of brighter hue,  
 That to the rock are native. War itself  
 Deals in adornments, and the blade it wields  
 Is curiously carved and gaily gilt.  
 For me, let what is left of life, if brief,  
 Be bright, and let me kindle all its fires ;  
 For I am as a rocket hurled on high  
 But a few moments to be visible,  
 Which ended, all is dark.

*Enter CECILE.*

CECILE.

Gracious, my lady!

My lord, my humble duty to your highness.

If I might speak —

ARTEVELDE.

What hinders you, Cecile?

ELENA.

Nought ever did, my lord, nor ever will;

When she has breath you'll hear her.

CECILE.

Oh, my lady!

That frightful man I've told you of so oft

That comes for ever with his vows of love

And will not be denied, — I always said

Begone! How dare you! Get you gone forsooth!

To bring such tales to me! But still he came

And now to-night —

ARTEVELDE.

Who is it that she speaks of?

ELENA.

His name is — nay, God help my memory!

What is his name, Cecile?

CECILE.

Van Kortz, my lady.

ARTEVELDE.

Not he that once was marshalsman?

CECILE.

The same.

ARTEVELDE.

I know him well — his quality at least,  
And his career I know. Right, right, Cecile ;  
Deny him stoutly, for he means no good.

CECILE.

I did, my lord, — I heartily denied him ;  
I said I never would so much as touch him.  
I told him if he 'd hang himself for love,  
I 'd love the rope that hanged him, — nothing else.

ARTEVELDE.

And yet he comes again ?

CECILE.

Even now, my lord,  
He came as though it were to wreak his spite,  
And showed me bags of gold, and said that now  
He was so rich that he could wed a countess,  
Let pass a waiting wench, and from this time  
He ne'er would look so low, but mend his fortune.  
I told him he might seek his fortune far,  
Ere he should find his match for pride and greed ;  
So with that word he set his spleen abroad,  
And cursing all the camp, and most your highness,  
Swore he could buy and sell the best amongst you.

ARTEVELDE.

What, said he so ? and showed you bags of gold ?  
He has been selling something. Ho, Van Ryk !  
Van Ryk is waiting, no ?

CECILE.

He is, my lord.

*Enter VAN RYK.*

ARTEVELDE.

Van Ryk, a word ;  
Thou know'st Van Kortz, the marshalsman that was —  
He parted hence but now, and I have cause  
To wish his person seized without delay  
And brought before me with all scrips, or scrolls,  
That may be found upon him. Take my guard,  
And see it done.

VAN RYK.

And bring him here, my lord ?

ARTEVELDE.

And bring him here.

*[Exit VAN RYK.]*

ELENA.

What is it you suspect ?

ARTEVELDE.

The gold is French.  
He has not lately had the means to thrive  
By Flemish gold. He was a man disgraced.

CECILE.

You 're right, my lord ; his talk was not of guilders,  
'T was still of crowns and francs.

ELENA.

Nay, but from whence  
Hath he French gold ?

ARTEVELDE.

From him whom France sent here  
Doubtless to bring it, — from the Knight of Heurlée.

ELENA.

Oh, surely, surely not — a man who came  
With sacred mission clothed, to seek for peace  
Under protection of a herald's office!  
It were but common honesty —

ARTEVELDE.

My friend,  
Say in what time hath honesty been common?  
Soft! silence, I beseech you; here's Van Ryk,  
And he has found his man.

*Enter VAN RYK with VAN KORTZ guarded.*

Whom hast thou there, Van Ryk, thus manacled,  
And what is his offence?

VAN RYK.

My lord, Van Kortz.

ARTEVELDE.

Van Kortz! The gudgeon whom Sir Fleureant hired  
To do French service, then betrayed, to save  
His proper head! Down, Sir, upon thy knees,  
And tell what wiles the crafty Frenchman used  
To cheat thee of thy loyalty.

VAN KORTZ (*kneeling*).

My lord,  
I tell the simple truth. Sir Fleureant sware

The paper which he charged me with for Ghent,  
Was for his private ends, and nothing touched  
The faith I owed your highness, and —

ARTEVELDE.

Van Ryk,  
Bring me Sir Fleureant of Heurlée here.  
Soft ye awhile! — what found you on Van Kortz?

VAN RYK.

My lord, this paper, and a bag of money.

ARTEVELDE (*reading the paper*).

*‘ Worthy masters of Ghent, — this is to make it known unto you, that we are hastily to come down into Flanders with a hundred-thousand men, and with God’s help to replace our worthy cousin, Lois of Flanders, in his ancient estate and royalties, reducing to his obedience all that be rightfully bound thereunto, and punishing the guilty. Wherefore we pray and counsel you, that at the receiving hereof, you return to your allegiance, and send to us in our army the heads of these following: that is to say, Jacob Maurenbrecker, John Stotler, and Ralph of Kerdell, which done, we shall receive all others whatsoever to our friendship, and promise by these presents that none, saving these only, shall be called to answer what is past.*

*‘ Written and sealed with the broad seal of France, in our host before Senlis, the 2d day of October, in the year of grace 1382, by the king in his council.’*

Stay, what is here? an after-thought of mischief:

*'You are to know that we have sent the like letters patent to the good towns of Bruges and Ypres, to which lest they reach not, we pray you to convey the contents hereof.'*

Who are the messengers to Bruges and Ypres?

VAN KORTZ.

Van Muck, my lord, to Bruges; to Ypres, Bulsen.  
They have set forth.

ARTEVELDE.

Convey him hence to prison.

Let fifty men be mounted — some pursue  
Sir Fleureant of Heurlée, some Van Muck,  
And others Bulsen, on the roads to France,  
To Bruges and Ypres, — for the head of each  
Proclaim a thousand florins — haste, Van Ryk!

*[Exit VAN RYK with KORTZ guarded.]*

CECILE.

Oh Lord, the villain! and he came to me  
So proud and saucy! Truly is it said  
Give rope enough to rogues, they'll hang themselves.

ELENA.

And must he die, my lord?

ARTEVELDE.

What plea can save him?

CECILE.

That he should jeopardize his wilful head  
Only for spite at me!

ELENA.

'T is wonderful !

ARTEVELDE.

That Providencè which makes the good take heed  
 To safety and success, contrariwise  
 Makes villains mostly reckless. Look on life,  
 And you shall see the crimes of blackest dye  
 So clumsily committed, by such sots,  
 So lost to thought, so scant of circumspection,  
 As shall constrain you to pronounce that guilt  
 Bedarkens and confounds the mind of man.  
 Human intelligence on murders bent  
 Becomes a midnight fumbler ; human will  
 Of God abandoned, in its web of snares  
 Strangles its own intent.

ELENA.

How fortunate

Was this man's malice thus conceived to thee,  
 My good Cecile ! All woman as I am,  
 I can forgive thy beauty, that hath bred  
 This love-engendered hate.

CECILE.

I thank you, Madam.

The scornful knave ! to bring his gold to me  
 That never would have looked upon him twice,  
 Though he 'd been made of gold !

ELENA.

How came you first

To give him that authority and rank,  
 Which late you took away ?



## ARTEVELDE.

Those are there here  
 That hardly will be governed save by men  
 Of fierce and forward natures. He was known  
 For daring deeds from childhood ; in his youth,  
 Famed for his great desire of doing evil,  
 He was elected into Testenoire's troop  
 Of free-companions : so in field or forest,  
 Or in walled town, by stipend lured, or vill  
 Surprised and sacked, by turns he lived at large,  
 And learned the vice indigenous to each.  
 Nought in dark corners of great cities done  
 Of lewdness or of outrage, was unknown  
 By him, or unpartaken ; nor the woods  
 Lodged in their loneliest caves a beast so wild.  
 The noise of strife and blows, the cry of murder,  
 Were to his ears indifferently common.  
 Thus grown at length more reckless than was safe  
 For his fraternity, they cast him off ;  
 And hanging loose upon the world what time  
 My name was noised abroad, he joined my camp.

*Enter* SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.

## SIR FLEUREANT.

So, my lord regent ! what is this I hear  
 Blown through the camp with trumpets ? what's my  
 head,  
 That you should price it higher than the sum  
 Of good repute for honorable dealing,  
 Which you must part withal to take it ? Much  
 I've heard of dangers in the Holy Land

Amongst the heathen and the infidel,  
But never thought in Christendom to find  
Such bloody breach of hospitable laws!

ARTEVELDE.

This is well spoken.

CECILE.

Oh, my lord, for that,  
He's free enough and hardy with his tongue.  
He told me to my face this very day  
I was forsworn.

ELENA.

Peace! peace! Cecile; be silent.

ARTEVELDE.

What you have here delivered, Sir, I say  
Hath been well spoken: it remains to ask,  
If that which you have perpetrated here  
Hath been well done. Know you this writing?

SIR FLEUREANT.

Yes.

I know it well; 't was by the king my master  
Writ to the mayor and citizens of Ghent.

ARTEVELDE.

By you brought here; by you to one Van Kortz  
Delivered for despatch; by him to me,  
Upon his apprehension, yielded up.  
Such is the story of these inky scratches,  
Which were to scribble out the loyalty  
Of three good towns, to soil the faith and courage  
Of my best friends, and finally to blur

The record of my glory in the page  
 Of history past, and blot me from the future !  
 This was a worthy business.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Aye, my lord ;  
 Who shall gainsay the King of France his right  
 To send what letters, or what words he will,  
 To the good towns of Flanders ?

ARTEVELDE.

Let him try ;  
 And gainsay those that can my privilege  
 To hang the bearers. Thou, Sir Fleureant,  
 Hast by thy treachery betrayed thyself,  
 And unavoidably must suffer death.  
 Thou cam'st a sharer in a herald's office  
 Ensuing peace ; and cloaked in that disguise,  
 With money for thy purposes provided,  
 'Thou hast bought treason. This may never pass  
 Unvisited with penalties extreme ;  
 Else what security is mine that faith  
 Is not put up to auction in my camp,  
 Till each man sell his brother ? Who provokes  
 Treason in others, to a traitor's death  
 Justly condemns himself. Such is thy lot :  
 Yet do I rue the judgment I pronounce,  
 And wish it undeserved ; for you have colored  
 The darkness of your indirect attempts  
 With a more lively cheer and gallant bearing  
 Than most could brighten their best deeds withal.  
 Sir, I am sorry for you.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Spare your pity,  
 And use your power. You see before you one  
 Who would more willingly confront the worst  
 Unpitied power inflicts, than cry Gramercy!  
 I have been used to deem the loss of life  
 But as a dead man's loss, that feels it not.

ARTEVELDE.

You shall do well of mortal life to think  
 Thus slightly, and with serious thoughts prepare  
 For that which is celestial and to come.  
 'Twixt this and daylight is your leisure time  
 For such purgation as you need. Cecile,  
 Send for some barefoot friar for the nonce,  
 And bid him come so stored and with such speed  
 As on a death-bed summons.

*(He steps to a door of the tent, and calls some  
 soldiers of his guard.)*

CECILE.

Yes, my lord.  
 I'll go myself, and say what work awaits him.

SIR FLEUREANT.

And prithee, wench, find me a merry friar,  
 Who shall beguile the time.

CECILE.

A merry friar!

SIR FLEUREANT.

Aye, wench; if any in the camp there are  
 They will be known to thee; a hearty man;

For I have ever looked on life and death,  
 The world which is and that which is to be,  
 With cheerful eyes, and hoped the best of both;  
 And I would have death's usher wear a smile  
 As through the passage of to-night he leads me.  
 So send a merry friar.

ELENA.

Oh, Sir knight!  
 If die you must so soon, for God's dear love  
 Take thought for your immortal soul's behoof!  
 Confess yourself and pass the night in prayer.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Confession will not hold us long; I'm young,  
 And have not yet had time enough to act  
 Sins that are long in telling;

*(Then to ARTEVELDE, who returns with two  
 soldiers of the guard.)*

You, my lord,  
 Cut short the catalogue betimes, I thank you.  
 To you, sweet lady, for your counsel kind  
 And monitory speech, my last poor prayers  
 I give, — more worth than thanks from dying men;  
 And in your supplications of to-night  
 When you lie down to rest, I humbly crave  
 To be remembered in return.

ELENA.

Alas!  
 Would I could stead you more than with the prayers  
 Of such a sinful creature!

SIR FLEUREANT.

Soon, sweet lady,  
 You'll need them for yourself. This fair array  
 Of warlike multitudes you see around you,  
 Will sunder and dissolve, like wreaths of snow  
 Pelted and riddled with the rains in March.  
 Then should my Lord of Bourbon find you here,  
 'Twill be a rude rencounter ; — if at Bruges  
 You found a lover in an enemy,  
 The tables will be turned at Oudenarde,  
 And in a lover shall you find a foe.  
 I pray you think upon it.

ARTEVELDE.

Fare you well.  
 These will conduct you to your place of rest,  
 And all your needs or wishes may require  
 To make the night pass easily, supply.  
 Again, Sir, fare you well.

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lord, farewell.  
 I hardly know what words should thank your bounty  
 That grants me every thing — except my life.  
 [*Exit, guarded.*]

ELENA.

Oh, would my lord that you could grant him that !  
 He is a gallant gentleman.

ARTEVELDE.

He's stricken ;  
 Which makes the meanest hold his courage high

In presence of his lady : notwithstanding,  
 He is a brave and very noble knight,  
 And nothing moves me in his favor more  
 Than what he spake to you. I'm grieved, in truth,  
 That stern necessity demands his death.  
 No more of that. —  
 The world declares us lovers, you have heard.

ELENA.

My lord ?

ARTEVELDE.

The world, when men and women meet,  
 Is rich in sage remark, nor stints to strew  
 With roses and with myrtles fields of death.  
 Think you that they will grow ?

ELENA.

My lord, your pardon ;  
 You speak in such enigmas, I am lost,  
 And cannot comprehend you.

ARTEVELDE.

Do I so ?  
 That was not wont to be my fault. In truth  
 There is a season when the plainest men  
 Will cease to be plain-spoken ; for their thoughts  
 Plunge deep in labyrinths of flowers and thorns,  
 And very rarely to the light break through,  
 Whilst much they wander darkling. Yet for once  
 Let love be marshalled by the name of love,  
 To meet such entertainment as he may.

ELENA.

I have been much unfortunate, my lord ;  
 I would not love again.

## ARTEVELDE.

And so have I ;  
Nor man nor woman more unfortunate,  
As none more blessed in what was taken from him !  
Dearest Elena, — of the living dearest, —  
Let my misfortunes plead, and know their weight  
By knowing of the worth of what I lost.  
She was a creature framed by love divine  
For mortal love to muse a life away  
In pondering her perfections ; so unmoved  
Amidst the world's contentions, if they touched  
No vital cord nor troubled what she loved,  
Philosophy might look her in the face,  
And like a hermit stooping to the well  
That yields him sweet refreshment, might therein  
See but his own serenity reflected  
With a more heavenly tenderness of hue !  
Yet whilst the world's ambitious empty cares,  
Its small disquietudes and insect stings  
Disturbed her never, she was one made up  
Of feminine affections, and her life  
Was one full stream of love from fount to sea.  
Such was her inward being, which to fit  
With answerable grace of outward favor,  
Nature bestowed corporeal beauty bright,  
Formed in such mood of passionate conception  
As when the Godhead, from a dream of love  
Awaking, with poetic rapture seized,  
Substantiates the vision, and the form  
His dreaming fancy feigned, creates alive.  
These are but words.



ELENA.

My lord, they 're full of meaning.

ARTEVELDE.

No, they mean nothing — that which they would speak  
Sinks into silence — 't is what none can know  
That knew not her — the silence of the grave —  
Whence could I call her radiant beauty back,  
It could not come more savoring of Heaven  
Than it went hence — the tomb received her charms  
In their perfection, with nor trace of time  
Nor stain of sin upon them; only death  
Had turned them pale. I would that you had seen her,  
Alive or dead.

ELENA.

I wish I had, my lord;  
I should have loved to look upon her much;  
For I can gaze on beauty all day long,  
And think the all-dâÿ-long is but too short.

ARTEVELDE.

She was so fair that in the angelic choir  
She will not need put on another shape  
Than that she bore on earth. Well, well, — she 's gone,  
And I have tamed my sorrow. Pain and grief  
Are transitory things no less than joy,  
And though they leave us not the men we were,  
Yet they do leave us. You behold me here  
A man bereaved, with something of a blight  
Upon the early blossoms of his life  
And its first verdure, having not the less  
A living root, and drawing from the earth

Its vital juices, from the air its powers :  
 And surely as man's health and strength are whole  
 His appetites regerminate, his heart  
 Re-opens, and his objects and desires  
 Shoot up renewed. What blank I found before me  
 From what is said you partly may surmise ;  
 How I have hoped to fill it, may I tell ?

ELENA.

I fear, my lord, that cannot be.

ARTEVELDE.

Indeed !

Then am I doubly hopeless. What is gone,  
 Nor plaints, nor prayers, nor yearnings of the soul,  
 Nor memory's tricks, nor fancy's invocations, —  
 Though tears went with them frequent as the rain  
 In dusk November, sighs more sadly breathed  
 Than winter's o'er the vegetable dead, —  
 Can bring again : and should this living hope,  
 That like a violet from the other's grave  
 Grew sweetly, in the tear-besprinkled soil  
 Finding moist nourishment — this seedling sprung  
 Where recent grief had like a ploughshare passed  
 Through the soft soul, and loosened its affections —  
 Should this new-blossomed hope be coldly nipped,  
 Then were I desolate indeed ! a man  
 Whom heaven would wean from earth, and nothing  
 leaves

But cares and quarrels, trouble and distraction,  
 The heavy burthens and the broils of life.  
 Is such my doom ? Nay, speak it, if it be.

ELENA.

I said I feared another could not fill  
 The place of her you lost, being so fair  
 And perfect as you give her out.

ARTEVELDE.

'T is true,

A perfect woman is not as a coin,  
 Which being gone, its very duplicate  
 Is counted in its place. Yet waste so great  
 Might you repair, such wealth you have of charms  
 Luxuriant, albeit of what were hers  
 Rather the contrast than the counterpart.  
 Color, to wit — complexion; — hers was light  
 And gladdening; a roseate tincture shone  
 Transparent in its place, her skin elsewhere  
 White as the foam from which in happy hour  
 Sprang the Thalassian Venus: yours is clear  
 But bloodless, and though beautiful as night  
 In cloudless ether clad, not frank as day:  
 Such is the tinct of your diversity;  
 Serenely radiant she, you darkly fair.

ELENA.

Dark still has been the color of my fortunes,  
 And having not serenity of soul,  
 How should I wear the aspect?

ARTEVELDE.

Wear it not;

Wear only that of love.

ELENA.

Of love? alas!

That is its opposite. You counsel me  
 To scatter this so melancholy mist  
 By calling up the hurricane. Time was  
 I had been prone to counsel such as yours ;  
 Adventurous I have been, it is true,  
 And this foolhardy heart would brave — nay court,  
 In other days, an enterprise of passion ;  
 Yea, like a witch, would whistle for a whirlwind.  
 But I have been admonished : painful years  
 Have tamed and taught me : I have suffered much.  
 Kind Heaven but grant tranquillity ! I seek  
 No further boon.

ARTEVELDE.

And may not love be tranquil ?

ELENA.

It may in some ; but not as I have known it.

ARTEVELDE

Love, like an insect frequent in the woods,  
 Will take the color of the tree it feeds on ;  
 As saturnine or sanguine is the soul,  
 Such is the passion. Brightly upon me,  
 Like the red sunset of a stormy day,  
 Love breaks anew beneath the gathering clouds  
 That roll around me ! Tell me, sweet Elena,  
 May I not hope, or rather can I hope,  
 That for such brief and bounded space of time  
 As are my days on earth, you 'll yield yourself  
 To love me living and to mourn me dead ?

ELENA.

Oh, not, my lord, to mourn you — why — oh God !

Why will you say so ? You distress me — no —  
 You will pursue your triumphs many a year,  
 And victory shall wait upon your steps  
 As heretofore, and death be distant far.  
 'Take back' those words ; I cannot bear them ; no,  
 They hang upon my heart too heavily.  
 Tell me you 're sure to conquer, as you are.

ARTEVELDE.

So, loveliest, let us hope. It may be so.  
 I'll swear it shall be, so you'll swear in turn  
 To give me up your heart.

ELENA.

I cannot — no —  
 I cannot give you what you've had so long ;  
 Nor need I tell you what you know so well.  
 I must be gone.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, sweetest, why these tears ?

ELENA.

No, let me go — I cannot tell — no — no —  
 I want to be alone — let me retire —  
 Dear Artevelde, for God's love let me go !

[Exit.

ARTEVELDE (*after a pause*).

The night is far advanced upon the morrow,  
 And but for that conglomerated mass  
 Of cloud with ragged edges, like a mound  
 Or black pine-forest on a mountain's top,  
 Wherein the light liès ambushed, dawn were near. —

Yes, I have wasted half a summer's night.  
 Was it well spent? Successfully it was.  
 How little flattering is a woman's love! —  
 The few hours left are precious — who is there?  
 Ho! Nieuverkerchen! when we think upon it,  
 How little flattering is a woman's love!  
 Given commonly to whosoe'er is nearest  
 And propped with most advantage; outward grace  
 Nor inward light is needful; day by day,  
 Men wanting both are mated with the best  
 And loftiest of God's feminine creation,  
 Whose love takes no distinction but of gender,  
 And ridicules the very name of choice.  
 Ho! Nieuverkerchen! — what, then, do we sleep?  
 Are none of you awake? — and as for me,  
 The world says Philip is a famous man —  
 What is there women will not love, so taught?  
 Ho! Ellert! by your leave though, you must wake.

*Enter an OFFICER.*

Have me a gallows built upon the mount,  
 And let Van Kortz be hung at break of day.  
 No news of Bulsen, or Van Muck?

OFFICER.

My lord,

Bulsen is taken; but Van Muck, we fear,  
 Has got clear off.

ARTEVELDE.

Let Bulsen, too, be hung  
 At break of day. Let there be priests to shrive them.  
 Who guards the knight, Sir Fleureant of Heurlée?

OFFICER.

Sasbout, my lord, and Tuning.

ARTEVELDE.

Very well.

Mount me a messenger ; I shall have letters

To send to Van den Bosch upon the Lis.

Let Grebber wait upon me here. Go thou

Upon thine errands. [*Exit* OFFICER.] — So, Van Muck  
escaped !

And Ypres will receive its invitation.

I think, then, Van den Bosch must spare a force

To strengthen us at Ypres for a season.

I'll send him orders. And Van Muck the traitor !

Stupidity is, seldom soundly honest ; —

I should have known him better. Live and learn !

[*Exit*

## SCENE IV.

THE INTERIOR OF A TENT.

SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE *is seated at a table, on which wine and refreshments are placed. Guards are seen without, walking backwards and forwards before the doors of the Tent.*

SIR FLEUREANT.

I oft before have clomb to tickle places,

But this will be the last of all my climbing.

Were it to do again, ten thousand dukes,  
 With all their follies and with all their fiscs,  
 Should tempt me not to such fool-hardihood.  
 Here is the end of Fleureant of Heurlée !  
 I know it; for my heart is dead already—  
 An omen that did cross me ne'er before  
 In any jeopardy of life.

*CECILE enters with a FRIAR.*

This wind  
 Is cold, methinks, that comes through yonder door.  
 I thought I had a cloak.

CECILE.

The friar, Sir.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Well, this is strange; — I surely had a cloak.

CECILE.

Sir, would you see the friar ?

SIR FLEUREANT.

Eh ? what ? who ?

CECILE.

The friar, Sir.

SIR FLEUREANT.

What friar ? — oh, your pardon !  
 What, is it time ?

FRIAR.

This wench, my son, brought word  
 That you would fain confess yourself o'ernight ;



And then make merry, like a noble heart,  
Till break of day that brings your latter end.

SIR FLEUREANT.

What is 't o'clock ?

CECILE.

An hour or two, no more,  
Past midnight.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Yes, I wished myself confessed ;  
But, by your leave, not now ; — my eyes are heavy,  
And I was fain to wrap me in my cloak,  
And lay me down to sleep, as you came in.  
I think I had a cloak.

CECILE.

'T is here, Sir, here.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Ah, there it is. The air, I think, is chilly.

FRIAR.

'T is a cold air, my son, a cold and dry ;  
But here 's an element that 's hot and moist  
To keep the other out. I drink your health.

SIR FLEUREANT.

My health ! ha, ha ! I'll lie me down and sleep,  
For I 've a mortal weariness upon me.

*[He lies down.]*

My body's or my soul's health do you drink ?

FRIAR.

I drink, Sir, to your good repose.

SIR FLEUREANT.

I thank you ;  
I shall sleep sound to-morrow.

CECILE.

Put this cushion  
Under your head.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Ah ! you are kind, wench, now !  
You 're not so saucy as you were. So, — there.

FRIAR.

And this I drink to your dear soul's salvation.

CECILE.

I'd tend you all night long, with all my heart,  
If it might do you good.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Good night, good night.

*[He sleeps.]*

FRIAR.

What, doth he sleep ? Then sit you down, my maid,  
And quaff me off this flask of Malvoisie.  
Come sunrise, and he'll lay his curly head  
Upon a harder pillow. — So it is !

'As a man lives so shall he die,  
As a tree falls so shall it lie.'

Take off thy glass, my merry wench of all ;  
Thou know'st the song that Jack the headsman sings—

'T is never to snivel and grovel  
 When a friend wants a turn of poor Jack's,  
 But put him to bed with a shovel,  
 Having cut off his head with an axe.  
 Having  
 Cut off his head with an axe.

CECILE.

Be not so loud, good friar, let him sleep.  
 He'll pass the time more easy.

FRIAR.

Let him sleep!  
 What hinders him to sleep? — not I, my lass;  
 I've shriven many a sinner for the gallows;  
 There's nothing wakes them but a lusty tug.  
 I'd rather he should sleep than you, sweet wench;  
 So this to keep you wakeful — Ah, you fat-ribs!

CECILE.

Begone you filthy friar! At your tricks  
 With here a dead man lying, one may say,  
 Amongst one's feet!

FRIAR.

Who's dead, my merry soul?  
 Not I, nor near it by these twenty years.  
 I've life and mettle in me yet, my woman,  
 For twenty summers — ah! thou know'st they say  
 An old dog biteth sore.

CECILE.

Out! ancient blotch!  
 Touch me again, and I will scream so loud  
 That all the camp shall hear.

*Enter ARTEVELDE.*

ARTEVELDE (*stumbling against SIR FLEUREANT, who wakes and sits up*).

So, what is this? what wrangle ye about?  
What mak'st thou, friar, with the wench?

FRIAR.

Who, I?

CECILE.

Aye, tell his highness how you 'd use a maid!

FRIAR.

Alack! we churchmen, Sir, have much ado!  
We are but men, and women will be women.  
Fie, they are naughty jades — sluts all! sluts all!  
Fie, how they steal upon our idle hours!

CECILE.

Thou liest, thou scandalous friar —

ARTEVELDE.

Soft you, Cecile!

FRIAR.

Oh, she's a light-skirts! — yea, and at this present  
A little, as you see, concerned with liquor.  
Fie! she's as common as a barber's chair.

CECILE.

I common! If it were not for thy cowl  
I have that lesson at my fingers' ends  
Should teach thee how to lay thy lecherous sins  
Upon an honest maid.

ARTEVELDE.

Peace, peace, I say!  
I would discourse some matters with this knight.  
Leave us together. Friar, go thy ways;  
Thy hands are not too clean. I know the wench;  
She would not tempt thee. Get thee gone, I say.

FRIAR.

My lord, the peace of God be with your highness,  
And with this knight, and with that sinful woman.

[Exit.

CECILE.

Mouldy old smell-feast!

ARTEVELDE.

Ease thy mind elsewhere,  
My pretty wench; I must have private speech  
Of the French knight.

CECILE.

Good even to your highness.

[Exit.

ARTEVELDE.

Good night, Cecile. — Sir, I disturbed your rest;  
I saw not that you lay there.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Oh, my lord,  
It matters not; to-morrow I shall lie  
Where you will not disturb me.

ARTEVELDE.

So you think.

SIR FLEUREANT.

So you, my lord, have said.

ARTEVELDE.

You stand condemned.

Yet 't is a word that I would fain unsay.

SIR FLEUREANT.

You are most kind my lord ; the word went always  
 You were a merciful man and fearing God,  
 And God is good to such and prospers them ;  
 And if my life it please you now to spare,  
 You may find mercy for yourself in straits  
 According as you show it.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, thy life

Is justly forfeited ; and if I spare thee  
 It is not that I look for God's reward  
 In sparing crime ; since justice is most mercy.  
 Thou hast an intercessor to whose prayers  
 I grant thy life, absolving thee, not freely,  
 But on conditions.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Whatsoe'er they be

I will be bound most solemnly by oath,  
 So God be my salvation, to fulfil them.

ARTEVELDE.

'T is but to pay thy debt of gratitude  
 To her whose charity redeems thy life,  
 That I would bind thee. At the supplication  
 Of thy lord's sometime lady thou art spared.

SIR FLEUREANT.

I'm bound to her for ever.

ARTEVELDE.

Sometime hence  
 Mischances may befall her. Though I trust,  
 And with good reason, that my arms are proof,  
 Yet is the tide of war unsteady ever ;  
 And should my hope be wrecked upon some reef  
 Of adverse fortune, there is cause to fear  
 Her former lord, thy master, who suspects  
 Uneasily her faith, in victory's pride  
 Would give his vengeance and his jealousy  
 Free way to her destruction. In such hour,  
 Should it arrive, thou might'st befriend the lady,  
 As in thy present peril she doth thee.

SIR FLEUREANT.

I were ungrateful past all reach of words  
 That speak of baseness and ingratitude,  
 Should I not hold my life, and heart, and service,  
 Purely at her behest from this time forth.  
 And truly in conjunctures such as those  
 Your highness hath foreseen, to aid her flight  
 Were service which no Fleming could perform,  
 How true soe'er his heart, — and yet to me  
 It were an easy task.

ARTEVELDE.

I trust the day  
 Will never come, that asks such service from you.  
 But should it so, I charge you on your faith  
 And duty as a knight, perform it stoutly.

Prudence, meantime, demands that you remain  
In close confinement.

SIR FLEUREANT.

As you please, my lord.

ARTEVELDE (*after a pause*).

What, watch there, ho!

*Enter two Guards.*

You will give passage to Sir Fleureant  
To go at large. My mind, you see, is changed.  
It ever was my way, and shall be still,  
When I do trust a man, to trust him wholly.  
You shall not quit my camp; but that word given,  
You are at large within it.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Sir, your trust  
Shall not appear misplaced.

ARTEVELDE.

Give you good rest!  
And better dreams than those I woke you from.

SIR FLEUREANT.

With grateful heart I say, my lord, God keep you!

[*Exeunt.*]



## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.

*The BURGOMASTER of Ypres, with several BURGHRES  
of the French faction, and VAN MUCK.*

BURGOMASTER.

Well, well, God bless us! have a care — oh me!  
Be careful how you speak; wear a white hat;  
And ever, mind'st thou, when thou see'st Vauclaire,  
Uncover and stand back.

VAN MUCK.

I will, your worship.

BURGOMASTER.

Nay, but you must. And Roosdyk — speak him fair;  
For give him but a saucy word, he's out,  
And twinkling me his dagger in the sun  
Says, 'take you that,' and you are dead for good.

VAN MUCK.

I'll speak him fair.

BURGOMASTER.

Nay, but I say you shall.  
'T is a good rule to be more civil-spoken  
Than wantonly be cut and stabbed for nothing.

VAN MUCK.

'T is so, your worship.

BURGOMASTER.

Cast not away your life.

VAN MUCK.

'T is as your worship pleases.

FIRST BURGHER.

But if Vauclaire, or Roosdyk, or the captains  
Should ask him whence he comes, or what's his craft,  
Being strange-looking for a citizen,  
What should he answer?

BURGOMASTER.

Say thou com'st from Dinand —  
From Dinand, say, to sell Dinandery,  
Pots, pitchers, mugs, and beakers, and the like.

VAN MUCK.

Suppose I'm questioned where they are.

BURGOMASTER.

You've sold 'em.  
Say you praise God. Say you're a thriving man.

FIRST BURGHER (*aside to second*).

This matter will be out.

SECOND BURGHER.

Why so?

FIRST BURGHER.

Good friend,  
Didst ever know a secret to lie close  
Under a goose's wing?

## SECOND BURGHER.

I think 't will out.

'T will surely out.

## FIRST BURGHER.

The frightened fox sits fast,  
Folly with fear will flutter still and cackle.  
(*Aloud.*) This will be known. I am for rising now,  
Slaying Vauclaire and Roosdyk in their beds  
Before they nose it, sounding through the streets  
King Charles's pardon and the town's submission,  
And so to present issue with it all.

## BURGOMASTER.

Mercy! what foolishness will young men talk!

## FIRST BURGHER.

Under your favor — old men too at times.

## THIRD BURGHER.

De Vry, a word. I marvel at thy rashness;  
We are not ripe for action: in a week,  
Perchance a day — nay, it may be this hour,  
Or Van den Bosch will conquer at Commines,  
Or the French force the passage. If the first,  
In vain were this revolt, for Van den Bosch  
Would quell us in a trice; and if the second,  
Then were the time to rise, for all the town  
Would then rise with us.

## SECOND BURGHER.

In good time, Verstolken;  
The axe's edge is turned toward us now,  
And what shall save us, if this mooncalf here  
Should let his errand out?

VAN MUCK.

Call you me mooncalf?

I am an honest man; I dare you, Sir,  
To signify me other.

SECOND BURGHER.

Hold thy peace.

Whilst the French king is looked for at Commines,  
Too wise is Van den Bosch to break his strength  
With sending soldiers hither. He but counts  
Nine thousand men.

FOURTH BURGHER.

The double were too few  
To be divided.

FIFTH BURGHER.

Less than some two thousand  
Would hardly march on Ypres, should we thrive;  
And if they did, we'd bowl them down like nine-pins.

SECOND BURGHER.

He'll never waste his forces upon us  
Whilst the French king's to come; and then the news  
Of Ypres fallen off, will cheer the French,  
Sicken the White-Hoods, and make sure the loss  
Of that famed passage, which shall magnify  
Our merits with King Charles.

*Enter a* SIXTH BURGHER.

SIXTH BURGHER.

Away, away!  
Vauclaire has word of all you do; a troop,

Despatched by Van den Bosch to give him aid  
Is riding into town. Van Muck's commission  
Is whispered of, and loudly.

BURGOMASTER.

There now, there!  
I told you so — I told you this would come;  
But still you talked of rising. Run, Van Muck,  
Thou villain run, and be not seen abroad  
With honest citizens.

SECOND BURGHER.

Aye, get thee hence;  
Best quit the town, and make thy way to France.

VAN MUCK.

I will, your worships.

*[Exit, but returns immediately.]*

Please you, Sir, the street  
Is full of men-at-arms that come this way.

BURGOMASTER.

I said so; there! and still you hearkened not!  
Oh Holy Ghost! Oh wala-wa! Oh me!

THIRD BURGHER.

What shall we do?

SECOND BURGHER.

Van Muck, stand fast; they come:  
It is Vauclaire himself.

BURGOMASTER.

Say you sell pots.

*Enter VAUCLAIRE and ROOSDYK, followed by a troop of Men-at-arms.*

VAUCLAIRE.

Ah, master Burgomaster, here you are !

ROOSDYK.

Make fast the doors.

VAUCLAIRE.

And thou, Verstolken — nay !  
Here 's Goswin Hex, and Drimmelen, and Breero !  
And thou, De Vry — Van Rosendaal, and thou !  
How rare a thing is faith ! Alas, my masters !  
Here is a work you put me to !

ROOSDYK.

Stand forth,  
Master Van Muck ? where are you ? — which is he ?

THIRD BURGHER.

What is it, Sirs, you charge us with ?

ROOSDYK.

What think ye ?  
Say treason, and I 'll call you conjurors.

VAUCLAIRE.

I have my orders — stand thou forth, Van Muck —  
And I must needs obey them. Say, what art thou ?

ROOSDYK.

A villain.

VAN MUCK.

No, Sirs, I am not a villain.  
I am a travelling trader ; I sell pots.

ROOSDYK.

Thyself—thou sell'st thyself— a precious vessel!  
Where is the provost marshal? Hark you, Sir!  
Put irons on them all, and give Van Muck  
A taste of what you have.

BURGOMASTER.

Hold off! what's this?

I am your master.

ROOSDYK.

Knock him on the head;

Bid him be patient.

VAUCLAIRE.

I am amazed at this!

So sweetly as you all demeaned yourselves!  
A guileful world we live in! God forgive us!  
Make fast the gyves, and take them off to prison.

BURGOMASTER.

Sirs, hear me! — oh!

ROOSDYK.

Gag me this grey-beard!

BURGOMASTER.

Oh!

FIRST BURGHER.

Thank God!

VAUCLAIRE.

The Stadt-House. You shall all be heard  
Except Van Muck, whose treason is too rank  
To be excused. I must obey my orders;  
First to the rack they doom him, then to the gallows.

VAN MUCK.

Sirs, grant me mercy ; I am not a traitor ;  
I'll tell it all.

ROOSDYK.

That shall you, or the rack  
Is not so good a singing master now  
As it was wont to be.

VAN MUCK.

Oh Lord ! oh Lord !

*(He is taken out.)*

VAUCLAIRE.

Bring them away : we'll hear them at the Stadt-House,  
Each by himself. Bring them away at once ;  
Keep them apart, and let them not have speech  
One of another.

ROOSDYK.

If any man make signs,  
Despatch him on the spot. Master Vauclaire,  
We follow you.

*[Exeunt.]*



## SCENE II.

THE FRENCH COURT AT ARRAS.

*An Antechamber in the Maison de Vill.* TRISTRAM OF  
LESTOVET, Clerk of the Council, and SIR FLEUREANT  
OF HEURLÉE.

SIR FLEUREANT.

When I forgive him, may the stars rain down  
And pierce me with ten thousand points of fire!  
His whore! his leman!

LESTOVET.

Had she been his wife,  
A small transgression might have passed. Learn thou  
To keep thy hands from meddling with men's whores;  
For dubious rights are jealously enforced,  
And what men keep for pleasure is more precious  
Than what need is they keep.

SIR FLEUREANT.

He'll be the worse,  
And knows it. When I fled I left behind  
A notion of my purpose. There's none here  
Can know like me his weakness and his strength.  
Let but the council hear me; I shall tell  
What shall be worth to them ten thousand spears.

LESTOVET.

'T is now their time to meet; but the young king  
Lies long abed. Here comes my Lord of Burgundy.

*Enter DUKE OF BURGUNDY.*

BURGUNDY.

Good-morrow, Sirs, good-morrow ! So, your stars,  
They tell me are your good friends still, good Flurry ;  
You always come clear off ; — well, I 'm glad on 't.

SIR FLEUREANT.

I give your highness thanks.

BURGUNDY.

So, so, Lestovet,  
My brother of Bourbon keeps his mind, they say ;  
He is for Tournay still ; 't is wonderful,  
A man of sense to be so much besotted !

LESTOVET.

His grace of Bourbon, Sir, is misdirected ;  
He is deluded by a sort of men  
That should know better.

BURGUNDY.

They shall rue it dearly.  
To turn aside ten leagues, ten Flemish leagues,  
With sixty thousand men ! 't is moonish madness !

LESTOVET.

Sir Fleureant here, who left the rebel camp  
No longer past than Wednesday, says their strength  
Lies wholly eastward of the Scheldt.

SIR FLEUREANT.

The towns

Betwixt the Scheldt and Lis, your grace should know,  
 Are shaking to their steeple-tops with fear  
 Of the French force ; and westward of the Lis  
 You need but blow a trumpet, and the gates  
 Of Ypres, Poperinguen, Rousselaere,  
 And Ingelmunster, gape to take you in.

## BURGUNDY.

They are my words ; they are my very words ;  
 Twenty times over have I told my brother  
 Those towns wóuld join us if he would but let them ;  
 But he 's as stubborn as a mule ; and oh !  
 That Constable ! Oh, Oliver of Clisson !  
 That such a man as thou at such a time  
 Should hold the staff of Constable of France !  
 Well ! such men are !

## LESTOVET.

My lord, I crave your pardon  
 For so exorbitantly shooting past  
 My line of duty as to tender words  
 Of counsel to your highness ; but my thoughts  
 Will out, and I have deemed that with his grace  
 Your royal brother, you have dealt too shortly.  
 The noble frankness of your nature breaks  
 Too suddenly upon the minds of men  
 That love themselves, and with a jealous love  
 Are wedded to their purposes : not only  
 His grace of Bourbon, but full many lords  
 Who bear a part against you in the council,  
 Would yield upon a gentle provocation,  
 That stiffen with a rougher.

BURGUNDY.

That may be ;  
 But, Lestovet, to sue to them to turn !  
 I cannot do it.

LESTOVET.

May it please your grace  
 To leave it in my hands. With easier ear  
 They listen to a man of low condition ;  
 And under forms that in your grace to use  
 It were unseemly, I can oft approach,  
 And with a current that themselves perceive not  
 Can turn the tenor of their counsels.

BURGUNDY.

Nay ;  
 But how can I be absent from the board  
 At such a time as this ?

LESTOVET.

A seizure, say,  
 Of sudden illness. They 'll be here anon, —  
 I think I hear them now.

SIR FLEUREANT.

There is a sound  
 Of horses' feet below us.

BURGUNDY.

Well, Lestovet,  
 You are a wise and wary man ; this day  
 I leave the field to you ; say that the gout  
 Confines me to my chamber.

LESTOVET.

Hark, my lord,

They come.

BURGUNDY.

Farewell to you ; improve your time.

[*Exit.*

LESTOVET.

Ha ! ha ! the council ! they are men of spirit.  
Arouse their passions, and they 'll have opinions ;  
Leave them but cool, they know not what to think.

SIR FLEUREANT.

You 'll tell them I am here.

LESTOVET.

Before they rise  
You shall be heard at large ; but leave to me  
To choose the fitting moment. Hide without  
Until the Usher have a sign : the mace  
Shall trundle from the board, which he shall hear ;  
Then come at once as one that from his horse  
Leaps down, and reeking hurries in to tell  
A tale that will not wait.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III.

## THE COUNCIL CHAMBER.

*The KING is brought in by the DUKE OF BOURBON, and seated on a Chair of State at the head of the Board; three seats are placed below, on two of which the DUKES OF BOURBON and BERRY place themselves. The other Councillors then enter, and take their seats in succession, to the number of twelve; to wit, SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON, Constable of France; SIR JOHN OF VIEN, Admiral of France; the LORD OF COUCY, SIR WILLIAM OF POICTIERS, SIR AYMONON OF PUMIERS, the BASTARD OF LANGRES, SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL, the LORD OF ST. JUST, the LORD OF SAMPI, SIR MAURICE OF TRESSIQUIDY, SIR LOIS OF SANKERE, and the BEGUE OF VILLAINES. A desk is placed opposite the lower end of the Board, at which is seated TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET, Clerk of the Council.*

## THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

My brother of Burgundy is sick to-day;  
Your majesty excuses his attendance.

## THE KING.

We do.

## THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Save him, our number is complete.  
Sir Oliver of Clisson, unto thee,  
By virtue of thine office, appertaineth,  
More than to any here, to point the course  
Of the king's armies: wherefore he desires  
Thou open this day's business.

THE KING.

'T is our will.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

May it please your majesty — my lords, and you !  
 So much was said on Friday of the choice  
 'Twixt Lille and 'Tournay — that the more direct,  
 And this, 't is justly held, the safer road —  
 'That I should waste your patience and your time,  
 Did I detain you long. To Lille, my lords,  
 Were two days' journey ; thence to Warneston  
 Were one day, let or hindrance coming none ;  
 But should the rains continue, and the Deule —

THE KING.

What ails my Lord of Burgundy, good uncle ?

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

The gout, sweet cousin. May it please your grace  
 To hearken to the Constable.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

My lords,

If with these luckless rains the Deule be flooded,  
 As there is cause to think it is already,  
 From Armentieres to Quesnoy, and the Marque  
 Be also fuller than it's wont, what days  
 Should bring us to the Lis were hard to tell.  
 But grant we reach so far, all over-passed  
 Without mishap the intervenient waters,  
 The bridges on the Upper Lis, we know,  
 Are broken down ; and on the further shore  
 Lies Van den Bosch — and where are we to pass ?

I put it to you, where are we to pass ?  
How do we cross the Lis ?

THE LORD OF SAIMPI.

May it please your grace,  
I would be bold to ask the Constable  
Hath not the Lis a source ?

SIR LOIS OF SANKERE.

Yea, one or more.

THE LORD OF SAIMPI.

Why, then it may be crossed.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

My Lord of Saimpi,  
Surely it may be crossed, if other ways  
Present no better hope. My lords, ye all  
Have voices in the council ; speak your minds,  
And God forefend that any words of mine  
Should blind your better judgments.

SIR AYMENON OF PUMIERS.

Higher up,  
A few leagues south, by Venay and St. Venant,  
The Lis is fordable, and is not kept.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Not kept, my lords ! why should it ? Van den Bosch  
Were doubtless overjoyed to see us strike,  
Amidst the drenching of these torrents, deep  
Into the lands of Cassel and Vertus ;  
An English force, for ought we know, the while  
Borne like a flock of wild geese o'er the seas,



And dropped at Dunkirk. On the left are they,  
The Flemings on the right; strong towns in front;  
And so we plunge from clammy slough to slough,  
With fog and flood around us.

SIR LOIS OF SANKERE.

Yea, wet-footed.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

What say you?

SIR LOIS OF SANKERE.

For the love of God, my lords,  
Keep we dry feet. Rheumatic pains, catarrhs,  
And knotty squeezings of the inward man,  
Thus may we fly the taste of.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Soft, Sir Lois;

Spare us thy gibes; I've stood more winter's nights  
Above my knees in mire, than thou hast hairs  
Upon the furnished outside of thy skull.

SIR LOIS OF SANKERE.

I say, my lords, take heed of mists and swamps;  
Eschew rain water; think on winter nights;  
Beware the Flemish on the Lis; beware  
The English, that are in much strength — at London.  
Ye've brought the king to Arras in November,  
And now ye find that in November rain  
Is wont to fall; ye find that fallen rain  
Swells rivers and makes floods: whereof advised,  
Take the king back with all convenient speed,  
And shut him up at Senlis.

THE KING

Hold, Sir Lois ;

I will not go.

SIR LOIS OF SANXERE.

I crave your grace's pardon ;  
I little dreamed you would ; you are a man.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Lois of Sanxere, I ask thee in this presence,  
Fling'st thou these girds at me ?

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

My lords, my lords !

I do beseech you to bethink yourselves.

Remember where ye are.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL (*drawing off his glove*).

Lois of Sanxere —

(*Here TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET, in arranging some parchments, touches the mace, which rolls heavily from the table, and falls close to the feet of SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL. He starts up.*)

LESTOVET.

No hurt, my lord, I hope ? Thank God ! thank God !  
Most humbly do I sue to you, my lord,  
To grant me your forgiveness.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Nay, tis nothing ;

It might have been a bruise, but —

*Enter an USHER, followed by SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.*

USHER.

Please your grace,  
Sir Fleureant of Heurlée waits without,  
Hot from the Flemish camp, which he but left  
Two days ago, and he can tell your grace  
How all things stand in Flanders.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Now we'll see!  
This is an apt arrival; welcome, Sir!  
What is the news you bring us?

SIR FLEUREANT.

Please your grace,  
The letters patent I sought means to send  
To Ypres, Ghent, and Bruges; but to the first  
Only they reached in safety, though from thence  
Doubtless the terms have spread. The regent, warned  
Of what was machinated, as I hear,  
Sent orders to the Lis for Van den Bosch  
To split his power, and throw a third to Ypres  
To fortify Vauclaire; whilst he stood fast,  
But held himself prepared, if Bruges should rise  
Or Ghent, to drop adown the Lis to Heule,  
Or Desselghem, or Rosebecque, there to join  
The regent's force, that then should raise the siege  
Of Oudenarde, and gather on the Lis.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

These are good tidings; yet I deem the Lis

Is still too strongly guarded for our force  
There to make way.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Your grace is ever just  
In all your views.

THE BEGUE OF VILLAINES.

Sir Constable, some thought  
Let us bestow on tidings whence we learn  
The fears o' the adverse, and the slide this way  
Of Ypres, Ghent, and Bruges.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Should these towns turn,  
A larger force the regent were constrained  
To keep i' the west; and passing down the Scheldt  
By 'Tournay, we are less opposed.

SIR LOIS OF SANKERE.

Not so.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

I say we meet with opposition less  
Upon the Scheldt at 'Tournay.

SIR LOIS OF SANKERE.

I say, no.

Turning our faces from these doubting towns,  
What can they but fall back?

SIR RAOUL RANEVAL.

Wilt have it so?

Methinks, my lords, if turning and backsliding  
And lack of loyalty ——

LESTOVET (to SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE).

Hilloa, Sir, ho!

You cannot go, you must not quit the board;  
My lords will further question you anon.  
Spake you not of the Scheldt? doubtless my lords  
Would hear you upon that.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Aye, aye, the Scheldt;  
What say'st thou of the Scheldt?

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lords, your pardon;  
With my own eyes I have not viewed the Scheldt  
Higher than Oudenarde; yet what I know  
More sure than common rumor I may tell,  
That reach by reach from Elsegem to Kam,  
At sundry stations, say Kerckhoven first,  
'Twixt Berkhem and Avelghem, where the Ronne  
Its tide contributes elbowing Escanaffe,  
At Pontespieres and Pecq, and divers points  
Betwixt them interposed, strong piles are driven  
Deep in the belly of the stream athwart.  
Thus neither up nor down can make their way  
Boat, raft, nor caravel.

THE BASTARD OF LANGRES.

We see, my lords,  
The Scheldt is no purveyor of our victual  
Should we proceed by Tournay.

THE LORD OF SAIMPL.

I surmise

We shall find spears as thick upon the banks  
As stakes within the stream.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Then let us find them !

Who is it now that finches and postpones ?  
I say, once passed the Scheldt, and better far  
We should confront the Flemish spears ; so be it !  
We 'd give the villains such a taste of France  
That thence for evermore ' Mount Joye St. Dennis '  
Should be a cry to make their life-blood freeze  
And teach rebellion duty.

SIR LOIS OF SANXERE.

Fee, faw, fum !

LESTOVET.

Sir John de Vien would speak ; Sir John de Vien  
Hath not yet spoken.

SIR JOHN DE VIEN.

Here we lie, my lords,  
At Arras still, disputing. I am a man  
Of little fruitfulness in words ; the days  
That we lie here, my lords, I deem ill spent.  
Once and again the time of year is told,  
That we are in November ; whiles we vex  
This theme, what follows ? — why, December ! True,  
The time of year is late, my lords ; yea, truly,  
The fall of the year, I say, my lords, November,  
Is a late season when it rains, my lords ;  
I have not, as you know, the gift of speech,  
But thus much may a plain man say, — time flies ;

The English are a people deft, my lords,  
 And sudden in the crossing of the seas ;  
 And should we linger here with winter coming,  
 We were not called good men of war, forsooth.  
 So truly, Sirs, my voice, with humbleness,  
 Is for short counsel ; in good truth, my lords —

THE KING.

Dear uncle, what 's o'clock ?

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

'T is noon, sweet cousin

THE KING.

I want my dinner.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Presently, fair cousin.

SIR LOIS OF SANXERE.

Your majesty is of the admiral's mind ;  
 You love short counsel ; marry, and of mine ;  
 I love it too ; more specially I love it  
 With mallets at our backs and winter near.  
 We talk so long, that what is said at first  
 What follows sponges from our memories.  
 Pass to the vote, my lords, nor waste your breath  
 In further talk.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Then pass we to the vote.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

So be it ; to the vote.

OTHERS.

Agreed : to the vote.

## LESTOVET.

My lords, may it please you, ere your votes I gather  
 That briefly I rehearse what each hath said,  
 As noted with a hasty pen, or writ  
 In a weak memory.

## THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

So do, Lestovet.

## LESTOVET.

First, my Lord Constable : he bade you think  
 What length of way and waters lay between  
 Ere you could reach the Lis ; where wher you come  
 You find no bridge, and on the further bank  
 The Flemish power : then spake my lord of Saimpi,  
 Touching a passage nearer to the springs  
 By Venoy and St. Venant ; whereunto  
 My Lord of Raneval made answer meet,  
 That though the Lis were fordable above,  
 Yet in the lands of Cassel and Vertus  
 There dwelt a dangerous people, sulking boors,  
 Who, when we straggled, as perforce we must,  
 Through bye-ways sundered by the branching waters,  
 Should fall upon us, foundered in the sloughs,  
 And raise the country round : — thus far, my lords,  
 Had you proceeded when the tiding came  
 Of Ypres, Ghent, and Bruges upon the turn,  
 Repentant of their sins and looking back  
 For their' allegiance ; with the sequel fair  
 Of much diminished squadrons at Commines.  
 Then though my Lord of Raneval spake well  
 Of clearance on the Scheldt, through direful need



That now must westward suck the Flemish force,  
 Yet in abatement came the shrewd account  
 Of how the Scheldt was grated, gagged, jaw-locked,  
 With here a turnpike, and with there a turnpike,  
 And Friesland horses. Said the Knight of Langres,  
 How shall our victual reach us? To which adds  
 Sir Hugh of Saimpi, that the banks are kept.  
 Whereat my Lord of Raneval rejoined  
 'That he, as best became him, took no heed,  
 So it were soon, to whereabouts he faced  
 'The Flemish scum in arms, or on the Scheldt,  
 Or on the Lis —

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

Permit me, Sir, the Lis

I spake nat of.

LESTOVET.

I humbly crave your pardon ;  
 My memory is but crazy, good my lords ;  
 It oft betrays me vilely. Sir Raoul,  
 I do beseech you pardon me ; I deemed  
 (Miled perchance by that so rife renown  
 Which plants you ever foremost) that your voice  
 Was mainly raised for speed.

SIR RAOUL OF RANEVAL.

I grant you that ;  
 No man is more for speed, my lords, than I,  
 So we outrun not wisdom.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Next — proceed.

## LESTOVET.

My lord, the admiral was next, and last  
 The Souldich of Sanxere ; the English fleet  
 Expected shortly ; winter distant now  
 But few days' journey ; mallets at your backs, —  
 These were their fruitful topics : on the last,  
 An't please your lordships to vouchsafe me audience,  
 Some tidings have I gathered, here and there,  
 Which haply not unworthy of your ears  
 You might, when heard, pronounce.

## THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Say on, Lestovet.

## LESTOVET.

At Paris, when the commons and vile people  
 Beat in the prison doors, ye know, my lords,  
 That Aubriot their friend, the sometime provost,  
 Who lay in prison then, made good his flight  
 To Arc in Burgundy ; from thence, I learn,  
 He looked abroad, and journeying up and down,  
 He practised with the towns upon the Marne,  
 With Rheims and Chalons, Toul and Bar-le-Duc,  
 With sundry villages in Vermandois,  
 And Brieche and Laon ; so he moved the poor  
 (Through help, as I believe, of something evil,  
 From which God shield good men !) that straight they  
 slew

The chatelains and farmers of the aids.  
 They next would raise a power and march to Paris ;  
 But Nicholas le Flamand bade them wait  
 Until the Scheldt were 'twixt the king and them,

Which steeper found, he trusted with their aid  
 To bring the castle of the Louvre low,  
 And not of Paris only, but of France  
 And Burgundy, to make the mean-folk lords.  
 Thus have I gathered from the last that left  
 Champagne and Beauvoisin.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Something of this  
 Reached me last night.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

I had some tidings, too.

SIR JOHN DE VIEN.

And I.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

I think, my lords, this matter asks  
 A further inquest. If the whole be true,  
 We were not wise in counsel to o'erlook it.  
 Let us take order so to sift the truth  
 That clearer-sighted we may meet to-morrow ;  
 Till when I deem it prudent we should hang  
 In a free judgment.

THE LORD OF ST. JUST.

Till to-morrow, then.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

One day's delay will hurt us not.

SIR LOIS OF SANXERE.

To-morrow.

THE LORD OF SAIMPI.

To-morrow be it, then.

SIR JOHN DE VIEN.

At noon, my lords ?

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

To-morrow noon. Sir Oliver of Clisson,  
Wilt please you ride ?

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Your highness does me honor.

THE KING.

Dear uncle, is the council up ?

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

It is.

THE KING.

Take that, old Tristram.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Soberly, fair cousin ;

You do not well to toss about the parchments.

Ho ! tell my serving men we ride to Vis,

The Constable and I. Adieu, fair Sirs.

*(Exit the KING and the LORDS OF THE COUNCIL.*

*Manent, TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET, and SIR  
FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.)*

LESTOVET.

Go to the duke ; tell him the point is carried.

SIR FLEUREANT.

But is it so ?

LESTOVET.

*It is as good.*

Which shelter found, he trusted with their aid  
 To bring the castle of the Louvre low,  
 And not of Paris only, but of France  
 And Burgundy, to make the mean-folk lords.  
 This have I gathered from the last that left  
 Champagne and Beauvoisin.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Something of this  
 Reached me last night.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

I had some tidings, too.

SIR JOHN DE VIEN.

And I.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

I think, my lords, this matter asks  
 A further inquest. If the whole be true,  
 We were not wise in counsel to o'erlook it.  
 Let us take order so to sift the truth  
 That clearer-sighted we may meet to-morrow ;  
 Till when I deem it prudent we should hang  
 In a free judgment.

THE LORD OF ST. JUST.

Till to-morrow, then.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

One day's delay will hurt us not.

SIR LOIS OF SANXERE.

To-morrow.

THE LORD OF SAIMPI.

To-morrow be it, then.

SIR JOHN DE VIEN.

At noon, my lords?

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

To-morrow noon. Sir Oliver of Clisson,  
Wilt please you ride?

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Your highness does me honor.

THE KING.

Dear uncle, is the council up?

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

It is.

THE KING.

Take that, old Tristram.

THE DUKE OF BOURBON.

Soberly, fair cousin;  
You do not well to toss about the parchments.  
Ho! tell my serving men we ride to Vis,  
The Constable and I. Adieu, fair Sirs.

*(Exeunt the KING and the LORDS OF THE COUNCIL.*

*Manent, TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET, and SIR  
FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.)*

LESTOVET.

Go to the duke; tell him the point is carried.

SIR FLEUREANT.

But is it so?

LESTOVET.

It is as good.

Come the French king, and we shall see this square  
More thick with gallows than with butchers' stalls  
Upon a market day.

WOMAN.

Nay, God forbid!

Master Van Stockenstrom, you will not say so?

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

It is not saying it that hangs them, dame;  
I tell you it is true.

WOMAN.

There's some have said,  
How that King Charles was mighty tender-hearted;  
The dukes his uncles likewise; and that none  
Were lother to shed blood.

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Those burghers said it,  
Whom yonder gallows wait for; and if lies  
Were worthy hanging, they deserved their doom.

WOMAN.

Well, Sirs, I know not.

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Tut! King Charles, I say,  
The dukes his uncles, and his councillors all,  
Are of one flesh, and follow after kind.  
There are humane amongst them! how humane?  
Humane to lords and ladies, kings and counts.  
Humane to such as we? Believe it not.

VAN WHELK.

The Earl of Flanders is the French king's cousin.

## VAN STOCKENSTROM.

His majesty, to show his cousin kindness,  
 Would canter over acres of our bodies.  
 His cousin is in what he calls distress;  
 To succour the distressed is kind and good;  
 So with an army comes the good King Charles,  
 And kindly to his cousin cuts our throats.  
 And that is their humanity, and such  
 Is man's humanity the wide world through!  
 Men's hearts you'll find on one side soft as wax,  
 Hard as the nether mill-stone on the other.

## VAN WHELK.

How is it with your own, Dame Voorst?

## WOMAN.

God save us!

I would not hurt a hair upon the head  
 Of any man alive.

## VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Look you, the Earl —  
 But hearken to a tale: Once in my youth —  
 Ah, Mistress Voorst! years, years, they steal upon us!  
 But what! you're comely yet, — well, in my youth,  
 Occasion was that I should wend my way  
 From Reninghelst to Ronques, to gather there  
 Some moneys that were owing me; the road  
 Went wavering like jagged lightning through the  
 moors, —  
 For mind, Van Whelk, in those days Rening Fell  
 Was not so sluiced as now; the night was near  
 And wore an ugly likeness to a storm,



When I, misdoubting of my way and weary,  
 Descried the flickering of a cottage fire  
 Thorough the casements ; thither sped my feet :  
 The door was opened by a buxom dame  
 That smiled and bade me welcome, and great cheer  
 She made me, with a jocund, stirring mien  
 Of kindly entertainment, whilst with logs  
 Crackled the fire, and seemed the very pot  
 To bubble in a hospitable hurry  
 That I might sup betimes. Now say, Dame Voorst,  
 Was not the mistress of this cottage lone  
 A kind good soul ?

WOMAN

Yea, truly was she, Sir.

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Master Van Whelk, what think you ?

VAN WHELK.

Let me see ;

Did she take nothing from you ?

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Not a stiver.

VAN WHELK.

Why, that was charitable ; that was kind ;  
 That was a woman of the good old times.

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Now mark Van Whelk ; now listen, Mistress Voorst.  
 The seething-pan upon the fire contained  
 Six craw-fish for my supper : as I stood  
 Upon the ruddy hearth, my unlaced thoughts

Fallen to a mood of idle cogitation,  
 My eyes chanced fix upon the bubbling pot :  
 Unconsciously awhile I gazed, as one  
 Seeing that sees not ; but ere long appeared  
 A tumbling and a laboring in the pot  
 More than of boiling water ; whereupon,  
 Looking with eyes inquisitive, I saw  
 The craw-fish rolling one upon another,  
 Bouncing, and tossing all their legs abroad  
 That writhed and twisted, as mixed each with each  
 They whirled about the pan. God's love ! quoth I,  
 These craw-fish are alive ! Yea, Sir, she answered,  
 They are not good but when they're sodden quick.  
 I said no more, but turned me from the hearth,  
 Feeling a sickness here ; and inwardly  
 I cried heigh-ho ! that for one man's one supper  
 Six of God's creatures should be boiled alive !

WOMAN.

Lord help us, Sir ! you wail about the fish  
 As they were Christians.

VAN STOCKENSTROM.

Look you, Mistress Voorst ;  
 The king will be as kind to Louis Mâle  
 As this good wife to me : of us mean folk  
 He will take count as of so many craw-fish ;  
 To please his cousin 't were to him no sin  
 To boil us in a pot. — Back, back, Van Whelk !  
 Here be the captains !

[*They retire.*

*Enter* VAUCLAIRE, ROOSDYK, and VAN DEN BOSCH's  
 LIEUTENANT.

## VAUCLAIRE.

Shrewd news ! whence cam'st thou last ?

## LIEUTENANT.

From St. Eloy.

## ROOSDYK.

On Monday was it that the French passed over ?

## LIEUTENANT.

All Monday night 't would seem that they were crossing  
By nines and tens ; the craft would hold no more.

## ROOSDYK.

Were there none watching of those jobbernowls  
That follow Van den Bosch ?

## LIEUTENANT.

The night was dark ;

The most part of our men were sent to sleep  
In quarters at Commines, that they might rise  
Fresh on the morrow, when the French, 't was thought,  
Would try the passage by the bridge. The rest  
Kept guard upon the causeway. Two miles down  
The river crankles round an alder grove ;  
'T was there they brought the boats ; strong stakes  
were driven

In either bank, and ropes were passed betwixt  
Stretching athwart the stream ; by aid of these  
Hand over hand they tugged themselves across,  
And hid within the thicket ; when day dawned  
They still were crossing, but the Constable,  
Who alway kept his ground, made show to force  
The passage of the bridge, and brought us there

To handy-strokes, which so misled our eyes  
That nothing else was seen.

ROOSDYK.

Ha, ha! I love you!  
Set you to watch the cat!

LIEUTENANT.

When first we knew  
Their stratagem, six banners could we count,  
And thirty pennons on the hither bank,  
The Lord of Saimpi leading them: were there  
Sir Herbeaux of Bellperche, Sir John of Roy,  
The Lords of Chaudronne, Malestroit, Sanxere,  
All Bretons, with Sir Oliver of Guesclin,  
The Lords of Laval, Rohan, Beliers, Meaulx,  
Sir Tristram de la Jaille, and to be short,  
The flower of all their host, from Poictou, Troyes,  
Artois and Hainault, Burgundy and France,  
That had their station marshalled in the van.

VAUCLAIRE.

And there they stood?

LIEUTENANT.

As yet they had not fought,  
When I was ordered thence; for Van den Bosch  
Upon the eminence beside the bridge  
Awaited them, as on a vantage ground,  
Whilst they abode below to gather force  
From them continually that crossed the stream.

VAUCLAIRE.

Then went you to the good towns near.

LIEUTENANT.

To Bergues,  
 To Poperinguen, Rolers, Warneston,  
 To Mesiers and Vertain, with strict command  
 From Van den Bosch to muster all their men  
 And send him succour; thence I hastened here  
 To pray you do the like.

ROOSDYK.

Oh rare! I love you!  
 Didst ever see one beggar dropping alms  
 Into another's hat?

LIEUTENANT.

My master sware,  
 If he should lose the day the cause should lie  
 In that misfortunate wasting of his strength  
 By sending aid to Ypres.

VAUCLAIRE.

Send it back,  
 And we shall lose the town, and he the battle,  
 Ere it shall reach him: from the nearer towns  
 He may be timeously recomforted.  
 Meanwhile lest ill betide him, which when here  
 It should be known, would bring a wild destruction  
 On us and ours, behoves us send forthright  
 Unto the regent, to advise his highness  
 Of what had come to pass. Christoffel Waal,  
 Mount thee thy horse and hie to Oudenarde,  
 And bid the regent know the Lis is passed.  
 That said is all said: he shall know by that  
 We shall have much ado with this good town,

Ere many days are gone, or many hours.  
If he can help us, so.

ROOSDYK.

Aye, mount thy nag,  
And make his heels strike fire ; away, begone !

VAUCLAIRE.

Know'st thou thy message ?

WAAL.

Sirs, from point to point.

[Exit.

*(A bell tolls. Muffled drums are heard, and the Head of a Procession appears entering the Market-place. The Procession is formed chiefly by Friars and Guards ; and lastly appear the BURGOMASTER and the ALDERMEN of several Guilds as Malefactors, with their arms pinioned. They form a line between the Gallows and the Stadt-House. The Market-place suddenly fills with the Populace.)*

VAUCLAIRE.

'This folk looks strangely ! guess you what 's toward ?  
Is the news known ?

ROOSDYK.

I see no women here ;  
There is a mischievous intent.

VAUCLAIRE.

Go you  
And get our men of battle under arms ;  
We shall have fighting ; this must mean a rescue.

ROOSDYK.

Let the clerks hold the culprits in confession  
 Some fifteen minutes, and I'll bring you here  
 'The most I can, and till I come again  
 Let no thief swing, for that should be their sign  
 Doubtless for rising. I'll be here anon.

[Exit.

*Enter a PRICKER.*

VAUCLAIRE.

Thy spurs are bloody — what, from Commines, ha!  
 A battle lost?

PRICKER.

'T is so, Sir. Van den Bosch,  
 With what remains of us is flying hither,  
 And wills you arm.

VAUCLAIRE.

We shall be armed anon:  
 And some of us you see.

*(He beckons to the Captain of the Guard, who  
 has charge of the Prisoners.)*

Sir, draw your men  
 More close upon their charge, and look about you,  
 For here's foul weather.

*(Cries begin to be heard and stones are thrown,  
 one of which hits the steel cap of VAUCLAIRE.)*

Said I not? look here!

These drops fore-run the storm.

*(A cry is heard at the opposite corner of the  
 Market-place, and VAN DEN BOSCH'S PAGE is  
 seen approaching.)*

Lo, — stand aside ;  
 There is a face I'll swear I've sometime seen  
 Attending Van den Bosch.

PRICKER.

His page, Sir, surely.

PAGE.

My master, Sir, is near —

VAUCLAIRE.

Say'st thou ! how near ?

PAGE.

Close on the town. He enters now.

VAUCLAIRE.

What force

Comes with him ?

PAGE.

It is hard to say ; they ride  
 So scattered and so broken, wounded most,  
 And mile by mile, now one and now another,  
 They tumble from their horses. He himself  
 Is sorely piked and gashed, and of his hurts,  
 One, the leech deems, is mortal.

VAUCLAIRE.

Christ forbid !

PAGE.

They bear him in a litter, and each jog  
 They give him, when the bearers change their hands,  
 Makes him to bleed afresh.



FRICKER.

See, there he comes!

*(The tumult, which had been increasing, is in some measure stilled as VAN DEN BOSCH is borne across the Market-place to the front of the Scene.)*

VAN DEN BOSCH *(raising himself in the litter)*.

Who's that? Vauclaire? We're ruined, Sir, we're lost!

How stand ye here?

VAUCLAIRE.

The worst is what I see.

Yet hath the town an evil inclination,  
And we shall feel it suddenly.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Send forth—

Be still, thou jumping villain, with thy jolts!  
Thou grind'st my bones to powder. Oh! oh! oh!  
I would thou hadst my shoulder.—Send abroad,  
And bid the Commons to the market-place.

VAUCLAIRE.

Nay, here they are, as thick as they can stand.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Are they? My eyesight fails me. And is this  
The market-place? Oho! then lift me up  
Upon some cart or tumbril or the like,  
That I may make a preachment to the people.

VAUCLAIRE.

Leave that to me; betake thee to thy bed;  
Roosdyk is making muster of our force,

And what is instant to be cared for here  
We will perform.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Not whilst I live, Vauclaire.

The leech, I think, has patched me up this body  
To last a season. Hoist me — have a care —  
Mount me upon this scaffolding: up, up —  
Smoothly and altogether — there we go —  
Oh! oh! that's thou again, uneasy whelp!  
Hast the string-halt? Now set me down; so — so.  
Let silence be commanded.

*(The soldiery fall back, so as to admit the people  
to the space immediately in front of the scaf-  
folding. Sundry officers pass to and fro,  
vociferating 'Silence,' which is obtained.)*

Friends, Sirs of Ypres!

Dear friends of Ypres! we have lost a battle.  
This once, by evil hap, the day is theirs:  
Which is no fault of mine; for, Sirs, I'll tell you  
How this hath chanced.

By the Black Art (which Frenchmen dare to use  
For lack of godlier-courage) — by this art  
They brought a cloudy film upon the eyes  
Of half our host — the half that should have watched;  
Which was on Monday night: and thus ere dawn  
They crossed the Lis. Then, Sirs, what force had I,  
Without advantage to affront the flower  
Of the French van? Solely twelve thousand spears!  
Yet, like a hedge-pig, tucked I up my power  
The softer parts within; and when Sanxere  
Came nuzzling like a dog to find some flesh

Whereon to fix and turn me inside out,  
 I'll warrant you I pricked his snout a little!  
 Well, Sirs, we might have conquered, but that then  
 The Commons of Commines — bell, book, and candle  
 Curse them that pass for Flemings and are none! —  
 They of Commines, that called themselves so stout,  
 Showed such a fear and faintness of their hearts  
 As makes me sweat with shame to think upon;  
 And, traitors in their flight, they fired the town,  
 To stay the following French. From that time forth,  
 Seeing we had no holding-place behind,  
 The best began to falter; and, in brief,  
 Ye see us here. — Fellow, some wine; I tire;  
 I've lost some blood.

VAUCLAIRE.

Prithee go in-a-doors,  
 And let thy hurts be tended.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

*(A cup of wine is brought, which he drinks off.)*

Fair and softly!

There's more to say.

*(An arrow, shot from the crowd, strikes the scaffolding close to VAN DEN BOSCH, whereupon loud cries are heard from both parties, and some blows pass between them, followed by great uproar and confusion.)*

Who hinders my discourse  
 With shooting cross-bow shafts? Oh, there you are!  
 See you yon villain there that gapes and shouts?  
 Send me an arrow down his throat. — I say,

This battle lost is nothing lost at all.  
 For thus the French are wiled across the Lis,  
 Which ne'er shall they repass. Inveigled on  
 By wheedling fortune, they shall thus be snared :  
 For hither comes the regent from the Scheldt,  
 And hither come the English, that are now  
 Landed at Dunkirk — landed now, I tell you ;  
 The news was brought me yesterday ; which heard,  
 Verily I was glad I lost this battle,  
 Although it cost me something — (for ye see  
 How I am troubled in my head and shoulder) —  
 Yea truly I rejoiced that thus the French  
 Should run upon a pit-fall, whilst we sweep  
 A circle round them, so that none — more wine —

*(Sinks suddenly back in the litter.)*

Here is a bandage loose — staunch me this blood —  
 Look ye, I bleed to death — oh, doctor vile !  
 Oh treacherous chirurgion ! — endless fire  
 Crumble his bones in hell ! — I die, I die !

VAUCLAIRE *(helping to re-adjust the bandage).*

Another plie ; now draw it tight ; anon  
 Roosdyk will come and give us escort hence ;  
 Meanwhile defend yourselves and shoot again  
 If you be shot at.

VAN DEN BOSCH.

Now the trumpets sound !  
 Chains for the king ! The trumpets sound again !  
 Chains for the knights and nobles ! Victory !  
 Thou gaoler, shut the doors. 'T is very dark !

Whose hand is this? — Van Artevelde's? — I thank you :

'T was Fortune favored me. Chains, chains and death!  
Chains for the King of France! — You've shut me in.  
It is all over with me now, good mother.  
Let the bells toll.

## VAUCLAIRE.

Bring him behind these boards;  
The arrows now come thickly. Send a flight ——  
They've loosed the prisoners. See, they bear this way;  
Shoot well together once and then fall back,  
And force a road to Ghent with Van den Bosch  
Alive or dead. I follow if I can.  
Well shot! — they're fluttered: steadily, my friends;  
Take forth the litter first; now close your ranks;  
Show a back front; so — off ye go — well done!

*[Exeunt, and the scene closes amidst loud cries of  
the pursuing party.]*

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.

VAN ARTEVELDE'S TENT, IN THE FLEMISH CAMP BEFORE  
 OUDENARDE.

ELENA *and* CECILE.

ELENA (*singing*).

Quoth tongue of neither maid nor wife  
 To heart of neither wife nor maid,  
 Lead we not here a jolly life  
 Betwixt the shine and shade ?

Quoth heart of neither maid nor wife  
 To tongue of neither wife nor maid,  
 Thou wag'st, but I am worn with strife  
 And feel like flowers that fade.

There was truth in that, Cecile.

CECILE.

Fie on such truth !

Rather than that my heart spoke truth in dumps,  
 I'd have it what it is, a merry liar.

ELENA.

Yes, you are right ; I would that I were merry !  
 Not for my own particular, God knows !  
 But for his ease : he needs to be enlivened ;

And for myself in him ; because I know  
That often he must think me dull and dry,  
I am so heavy-hearted, and at times  
Outright incapable of speech. Oh me !  
I was not made to please.

CECILE.

Yourself, my lady ;  
'T is true to please yourself you were not made,  
Being truly by yourself most hard to please ;  
But speak for none beside ; for you were made  
Almightily all others to enchant,  
Wherein you never fail.

ELENA.

Yes, but I do.  
How can I please him when I cannot speak ?  
When he is absent I am full of thought,  
And fruitful in expression inwardly,  
And fresh and free and cordial is the flow  
Of my ideal and unheard discourse,  
Calling him in my heart endearing names  
Familiarly fearless. But alas !  
No sooner is he present than my thoughts  
Are breathless and bewitched, and stunted so  
In force and freedom, that I ask myself  
Whether I think at all, or feel, or live,  
So senseless am I !

CECILE.

Heed not that, my lady ;  
Men heed not what they never heard of one  
That quarrel with his lady for not t

I have had lovers more than I can count ;  
 And some so quarrelsome, a slap in the face  
 Would make them hang themselves if you 'd believe  
 them ;

But for my insufficiencies of speech  
 They ne'er reproached me : no, the testiest of them  
 Ne'er fished a quarrel out of that.

ELENA.

Thy swains

Might bear their provocations in that kind,  
 Yet not of silence prove themselves enamoured.  
 But mark you this, Cecile : your grave and wise  
 And melancholy men, if they have souls,  
 As commonly they have, susceptible  
 Of all impressions, lavish most their love  
 Upon the blithe and sportive, and on such  
 As yield their want, and chase their sad excess,  
 With jocund salutations, nimble talk,  
 And buoyant bearing. Would that I were merry !  
 Mirth have I valued not before ; but now  
 What would I give to be the laughing front  
 Of gay imaginations ever bright,  
 And sparkling fantasies ! Oh, all I have,  
 Which is not nothing, though I prize it not ;  
 My understanding soul, my brooding sense,  
 My passionate fancy, and the gift of gifts  
 Dearest to woman — which deflowering Time,  
 Slow ravisher, from clenched'st fingers wrings —  
 My corrupted beauty, would I barter now

and exulting spirit

en. — Who comes hither ?



CECILE.

'T is the old friar ; he they sent to England ;  
That ancient man so yellow ! By our Lady !  
He's yellower than he went. Note but his look :  
His rind's the color of a mouldy walnut.  
Troth ! his complexion is no wholesomer  
Than a sick frog's.

ELENA.

Be silent ; he will hear you.

CECILE.

It makes me ill to look at him.

ELENA.

Hush ! hush !

CECILE.

It makes me very ill.

*Enter* FATHER JOHN OF HEDA.

FATHER JOHN.

Your pardon, lady ;  
I seek the regent.

ELENA.

Please you, sit awhile ;  
He comes anon.

FATHER JOHN.

This tent is his ?

ELENA.

It is.

FATHER JOHN.

And likewise yours. (*Aside.*) Yea, this is as I heard ;  
 A wily woman hither sent from France.  
 Alas, alas ! how frail the state of man !  
 How weak the strongest ! This is such a fall  
 As Samson suffered.

CECILE (*aside to ELENA*).

How the friar croaks !  
 What is he gibbering ?

ELENA.

May we not deem  
 Your swift return auspicious ? Sure it denotes  
 A prosperous mission ?

FATHER JOHN.

What I see and hear  
 Of sinful courses, and of nets and snares  
 Encompassing the feet of them that once  
 Were steadfast deemed, speaks only to my heart  
 Of coming judgments.

CECILE.

What I see and hear  
 Of naughty friars and of ——

ELENA.

Peace, Cecile !  
 Go to your chamber ; you forget yourself.

[*Exit* CECILE.

Father, your words afflict me.

*Enter VAN ARTEVELDE.*

ARTEVELDE (*as he enters*).

Who is it says

That Father John is come? Ah! here he is.  
Give me your hand, good Father! For your news,  
Philosophy befriend me that I show  
No strange impatience; for your every word  
Must touch me in the quick.

FATHER JOHN.

To you alone

Would I address myself.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, heed not her;

She is my privy councillor.

FATHER JOHN.

My lord,

Such councillors I abjure. My function speaks,  
And through me speaks the Master whom I serve:  
After strange women them that went astray  
God never prospered in the olden time,  
Nor will he bless them now. An angry eye  
That sleeps not, follows thee till from thy camp  
Thou shalt have put away the evil thing.  
This in her presence will I say —

ELENA.

Oh God!

FATHER JOHN.

That whilst a foreign leman —

ARTEVELDE.

Spare her, Father.

To me say what thou wilt.

FATHER JOHN.

Thus then it is :

This foreign tie is not to Heaven alone  
 Displeasing, but to those on whose firm faith  
 Rests under Heaven your all ; —  
 It is offensive to your army — nay  
 And justly, for they deem themselves betrayed,  
 When circumvented thus by foreign wiles  
 They see their chief.

ELENA.

Oh ! let me quit the camp.

Misfortune follows wheresoe'er I come !  
 My destiny on whomsoe'er I love  
 Alights ! It shall not, Artevelde, on thee ;  
 For I will leave thee to thy better fortune,  
 And pray for thee aloof.

FATHER JOHN.

Thou shalt do well

For him and for thyself ; the camp is now  
 A post of danger.

ELENA.

Artevelde ! Oh God !

And must I quit thee then in danger's hour !

FATHER JOHN.

As thou wouldst make his danger more or less,  
 So now demean thyself — stay or depart.

I say again the universal camp,  
 Nay more — the towns of Flanders are agape  
 With tales of sorceries, witcheries, and spells,  
 That blind their chief, and yield him up a prey  
 To treasons foul. How much is true or false  
 I know not, and I say not ; but this truth  
 I sorrowfully declare, — that ill repute  
 And sin and shame grow up with every hour  
 That sees you linked together in these bonds  
 Of spurious love.

ELENA.

Father, enough is said.

Clerk's eyes nor soldier's will I more molest  
 By tarrying here. Seek other food to feed  
 Your pious scorn and pertinent suspicions.  
 I am a sinful and unhappy creature ;  
 Yet may be injured ; there is room to wrong me,  
 As you will find hereafter. I will go,  
 Lest this injustice done to me work harm  
 Unto my lord the regent.

ARTEVELDE.

Hold, Elena ;  
 Give me a voice in this. You, Father John,  
 I blame not, nor myself will justify ;  
 But call my weakness what you will, the time  
 Is past for reparation. Now to cast off  
 The partner of my sin were further sin ;  
 'T were with her first to sin, and next against her.  
 And for the army, if their trust in me  
 Be sliding, let it go ; I know my course.

And be it armies, cities, people, priests,  
'That quarrel with my love, wise men or fools,  
Friends, foes, or factions, they may swear their oaths,  
And make their murmur — rave, and fret, and fear,  
Suspect, admonish — they but waste their rage,  
Their wits, their words, their counsel : Here I stand  
Upon the deep foundations of my faith,  
To this fair outcast plighted ; and the storm  
That princes from their palaces shakes out,  
Though it should turn and head me, should not strain  
The seeming silken texture of this tie. —  
'To business next. — Come hither, my Elena ;  
I will not have thee go as one suspect ;  
Stay and hear all. Father, forgive my heat,  
And do not deem me stubborn. Now at once  
The English news ?

FATHER JOHN.

Your deeds upon your head !  
Be silent, my surprise — be told, my tale.  
No open answer from the English king  
Could we procure, no honest yea or nay,  
But only grave denotements of good will,  
With mention of the perils of the seas,  
The much tempestuous season, and the loss  
Unspeakable that England suffered late  
In her sea-strengths ; but not the less, they said,  
By reason of good love and amity,  
The king should order reckonings to be made,  
By two sufficient scholars, of the charge  
Of what we sought ; his parliament then sitting  
He would take counsel of, and send you word  
What might be done.

ARTEVELDE.

A leisurely resolve.

The king took counsel of his own desires,  
 Ere of his lords and commons. Had he wished  
 To do this thing, he had not asked advice.  
 In the pure polity of a monarch's mind  
 The will is privy-councillor to the judgment.  
 When shall his answer reach us ?

FATHER JOHN.

In my wake

Sir Richard Farrington, I found, had followed ;  
 And, sped by favorabler winds than mine,  
 Reached Dunkirk with me. Letters sealed he brought ;  
 But hearing how far forth the French had fared,  
 He halted, and would neither bring nor send  
 His letters, nor their purport would disclose.

ARTEVELDE.

Have you no guess of their contents ?

FATHER JOHN.

A shrewd one.

They promised, doubtless, largely ; but were meant  
 To be delivered should you thrive — not else.  
 The English nobles, though they'd use your arms,  
 If victory crowned them, to encumber France,  
 Much in their secret minds mislike your cause.  
 Jack Straw, Wat 'Tyler, Lister, Walker, Ball,  
 That against servage raised the late revolt,  
 Were deemed the spawn of your success : last year  
 Has taught the nobles that their foes at home  
 Are worthier notice than the French. In truth

They should not be displeas'd at any ill  
That might befall you.

ARTEVELDE.

Father, so I think.

Lo! with the chivalry of Christendom  
I wage my war — no nation for my friend,  
Yet in each nation having hosts of friends!  
The bondsmen of the world, that to their lords  
Are bound with chains of iron, unto me  
Are knit by their affections. Be it so.  
From kings and nobles will I seek no more  
Aid, friendship, nor alliance. With the poor  
I make my treaty, and the heart of man  
Sets the broad seal of its allegiance there,  
And ratifies the compact. Vassals, serfs,  
Ye that are bent with unrequited toil,  
Ye that have whitened in the dungeon's darkness  
Through years that knew not change of night and day—  
Tatterdemalions, lodgers in the hedge,  
Lean beggars with raw backs and rumbling maws,  
Whose poverty was whipped for starving you, —  
I hail you my auxiliars and allies,  
The only potentates whose help I crave!  
Richard of England, thou hast slain Jack Straw;  
But thou hast left unquenched the vital spark  
That set Jack Straw on fire. The spirit lives;  
And, as when he of Canterbury fell,  
His seat was filled by some no better clerk,  
So shall John Ball that slew him be replaced;  
And if I live and thrive, these English lords  
Double requital shall be served withal



For this their double-dealing. — Pardon me ;  
 You are but just dismounted, and the soil  
 Of travel is upon you ; food and rest  
 You must require. Attendance there ! what ho !

*Enter TWO SERVING MEN.*

These will supply your wants. To-morrow morn  
 We will speak more together. Father John,  
 Though peradventure fallen in your esteem,  
 I humbly ask your blessing, as a man,  
 That having passed for more in your repute  
 Than he could justify, should be content,  
 Not with his state, but with the judgment true  
 That to the lowly level of his state  
 Brings down his reputation.

FATHER JOHN.

Oh, my son !  
 High as you stand, I will not strain mine eyes  
 To see how higher still you stood before.  
 God's blessing be upon you ! Fare you well.

[*Exit.*

ARTEVELDE.

The old man weeps. Let England play me false.  
 The greater is my glory if the day  
 Is won without her aid. I stand alone ;  
 And standing so against the mingled might  
 Of Burgundy and France, to hold mine own  
 Is special commendation ; to prevail  
 So far as victory were high renown ;  
 To be foredone no singular disgrace.

ELENA.

Look! a horse-stranger comes.

*Enter an ATTENDANT, followed by a Man-at-arms.*

ATTENDANT.

May't please your highness,  
A scout from Van den Bosch.

ARTEVELDE.

And with ill news  
Thy face would say. What is it?

SCOUT.

Please your highness,  
My master bids you know that yesterday  
Some cunning Frenchmen stole across the Lis  
In boats and rafts, a league below Commines,  
And now they press him hard upon his rear ;  
Wherefore he warns you that you look to Ypres,  
Which he can do no longer.

ARTEVELDE.

The Lis past!  
Mischief, be welcome, if thou com'st alone!  
Is that the worst?

SCOUT.

'T is all, my lord, I know.

ELENA.

Is it so very bad?

ARTEVELDE.

No, no, 't is not.  
Let him have food and wine; he has ridden hard,

And lacks refreshment. Go, repair thy looks,  
 And make me no such signals in my camp  
 Of losses and mishap. Speak cheerily  
 To whomsoe'er thou seest.

[*Exeunt ATTENDANT and SCOUT.*

No, 't is untoward,  
 Luckless, unfortunate; but that is all.  
 If Ypres bear as stoutly up against it  
 As I can do, we're not so much the worse.

*Enter VAN RYK, followed by a MESSENGER.*

VAN RYK.

A messenger, my lord, arrived from Ypres.

ARTEVELDE.

Here is another ugly face of news!  
 What now?

MESSENGER.

My lord, sure tidings came last night  
 That Van den Bosch was worsted on the Lis,  
 And with a broken force was falling back  
 On Ypres for protection.

ARTEVELDE.

Is that all?

MESSENGER.

It is, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

It is enough. What news  
 Had ye of Menin, Werwick, and Messines?

MESSENGER.

bells were rung in each, and they were bid  
 end all aid that they could muster straight  
 Van den Bosch ; but little went, or none.

ARTEVELDE.

doubtless now the Frenchman has them all ?

MESSENGER.

ow not that, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

But I do. Go ;  
 u art a wofuller fellow than the last,  
 cheerfuller than what is like to follow.  
 thee to dinner, and be spare of speech.

MESSENGER.

master bade me to entreat your highness  
 send him instant succour.

ARTEVELDE.

What, to Ypres ?  
 s mad to think it ! How should aid get there,  
 1 all the Upper Lis, as past a doubt  
 ust be now, from Warnestown to Courtray,  
 run with French ? I will not send a man.  
 ere but to lose more.

MESSENGER.

My master, Sir,  
 fearful of the burghers.

ARTEVELDE.

So he might,

And I am troubled at his jeopardy ;  
 Far liefer would I part with this right hand,  
 Than with Vauclaire, his service, and his love.  
 I think the burghers will hold off awhile  
 To see the issue of my personal arms.  
 If not, I cannot help him. If they do,  
 That which is best for all is best for him.  
 Go : keep thy counsel ; talk not in the camp.

[*Exit* MESSENGER.]

VAN RYK.

My lord, the rumor in the camp goes further  
 Than where his story stops.

ARTEVELDE.

Aye, does it ; how ?

VAN RYK.

Ypres revolted ; Van den Bosch, Vauclaire,  
 And Roosdyk slain or taken. So it runs.

ELENA.

Oh, this is worse and worse !

ARTEVELDE.

Go in, Elena.

These are not matters for a feminine council.

ELENA.

Oh, let me stay with you.

ARTEVELDE.

Go in, my love. —

[*Exit* ELENA.]

Worst rumors now will still be likest truth ;

And yet, if Ypres truly had revolted,  
Undoubted tidings of so great a matter  
Had surely reached us.

VAN RYK.

If you mark, my lord,  
Mostly a rumor of such things precedes  
The certain tiding.

ARTEVELDE.

It is strange, yet true,  
That doubtful knowledge travels with a speed  
Miraculous, which certain cannot match.  
I know not why, when this or that has chanced,  
The smoke should come before the flash; yet 't is so.  
Why who comes here? Vauclaire himself!

*Enter VAUCLAIRE, in disordered apparel, and covered  
with the soil of travel.*

Vauclaire,  
Thy coming speaks; it tells of Ypres lost;  
Perhaps of worse; and thou art welcome still!  
Can friendship speak thee fairer?

VAUCLAIRE.

Thanks, my lord.  
You have lost Ypres, 't is no worse nor better.

ARTEVELDE.

I can spare Ypres so I keep Vauclaire.  
Let the town go. How came you off alive?

VAUCLAIRE.

The rascal burghers tied me hand and foot,

And like a thief upon a hurdle trailed me  
 Toward King Charles's camp upon the mount ;  
 Half way to which some twenty of my guard,  
 With Roosdyk at their head, broke in upon them,  
 Crying a rescue, and ere aid could come  
 We were safe mounted upon chosen nags  
 That distanced all pursuit.

ARTEVELDE.

Why that is well.

Where 's Roosdyk ?

VAUCLAIRE.

Eating, I 'll be sworn, and drinking.

ARTEVELDE.

And Van den Bosch ?

VAUCLAIRE.

That is a sadder story ;

I fear he lives no longer.

ARTEVELDE.

Aye, Vauclaire !

VAUCLAIRE.

Much wounded from Commines he came to Ypres,  
 Whence we despatched him, less alive than dead,  
 Upon the road to Ghent. I hardly think  
 That he can live the journey through.

ARTEVELDE.

Farewell !

Brave Van den Bosch ! and God assoile thy soul !  
 Vauclaire, we must be stirring ; to the dead

An after time will give the meed of mourning ;  
 Our present days are due to them that live.  
 Let us to council with my officers,  
 And sit by me ; for in my host henceforth  
 Thou shalt be next me in authority.

VAUCLAIRE.

Deep are my debts to your good-will, my lord ;  
 More than my life can pay.

ARTEVELDE.

Nay, say no more ;  
 You owe me nothing ; what I have to give  
 Is held in trust and parted with for service.  
 Value received is writ on my commissions,  
 Nor would I thank the man that should thank me  
 For aught as given him gratis. Let's to council ;  
 I'll lie no longer here at Oudenarde  
 To hear of towns betraying me. Our camp  
 We must break up to-morrow and push on  
 Boldly to Courtray and the Lower Lis.  
 The towns to the North and West will falter else  
 And Frenchify their faith. It is God's mercy  
 That some seven thousand citizens of Bruges  
 Are in my host, whose heads will pledges be  
 For what might fail me there. From Damme and Sluys,  
 From Dendermonde, the Quatre-Metiers, Ghent,  
 From Ardenburgh and Grammont and Alost,  
 We'll bring the rear-guard up. The Lis, the Lis !  
 Let me but reach the Lis before King Charles !

VAUCLAIRE.

The Upper Lis were easily regained  
 Could we but keep the Lower.



ARTEVELDE.

Now to council.

*Enter VAN RYK.*

VAN RYK.

A countryman, my lord, arrived from Heule  
Says that King Charles is on his march to Rosebecque.

ARTEVELDE.

To Rosebecque let him come! With God's good-speed  
I shall be there before him. Sirs, to council.

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II.

THE FRENCH CAMP AT WINKEL ST. ELOY.

*Enter from opposite sides the DUKE OF BURGUNDY and  
TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.*

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Another town come in, I hear; that's ten.  
Now they will own I knew my way to Flanders.  
Ypres, and Dunkirk, Cassel, Thorout, Bergues,  
Makes five walled towns, and Poperinguen six;  
And then there's Werwick, Vailant, and Messines,  
And now comes Rousselaere, which rounds the tale.  
Anon they'll say that I had reason, ha?

## TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

They will, my lord. Success will couch the blind.  
 The wise by speculation know to trade,  
 And give their wits long credit and they thrive ;  
 A scrambling wit must live from hand to mouth  
 On issues and events. Prosperity  
 Is warranty of wisdom with the world ;  
 Failure is foolishness. Now all will prize  
 Your grace's judgment at its worth.

(*A cry within 'Place ho !'*)

*Enter the KING, with SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON, the LORDS OF SAIMPI AND SANXERE, and others, and lastly, somewhat apart from the rest, SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE.*

## THE KING.

Well, uncle, here we are ! Get supper ready.  
 How fast you rode ! I galloped half a mile —  
 But then St. Poule, he blew — oh he's too fat !  
 Is not the bastard of St. Poule too fat ?

## THE LORD OF SAIMPI.

May 't please your majesty he's grossly fat.

## THE KING.

I galloped — uncle, what is this ? Lo me !  
 A span-new sword — by God, of Spanish steel,  
 And longer than mine own — uncle, by God,  
 A king's sword should be longer than a duke's ;  
 I must have this ; this is a royal sword.

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Cousin, you are not tall enough to wear it.

THE KING.

Not tall enough indeed! Is supper ready?  
When shall we get to Rosebecque? Here's St. Poule.

*Enter* ST. POULE.

So, here you come, you broken-winded bastard,  
You're always left behind. How far to Rosebecque?  
Tell me, my lords, shall we be there to-morrow?

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Your majesty, with weather to your wish,  
Might lodge at Rosebecque with your vanguard force  
To-morrow night.

THE KING.

And when shall come the rear?

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

On Wednesday morning.

THE KING.

And on Thursday night  
The bastard of St. Poule. Hurrah for Rosebecque!  
Remember uncle, when the armies meet,  
I am to make the knights; four hundred of them,  
The Constable himself will tell you so.  
Four hundred fire-new knights there should be made  
Before the battle joins, and I'm to make them;  
My Lord of Clisson am I not? Thwack, thwack,  
Thwack, thwack, thwack, thwack, will go my sword,  
thwack, thwack.  
You Tristram of Lestovet, kneel you down  
And I will — thwack — I'll try my hand — thwack,  
thwack.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Come, cousin, come, you 're wanton. Go within  
And eat your supper.

THE KING.

What, is supper ready?

Lights, lights here, ho! Come, bastard, come along.

The first of a feast and the last of a fray  
Has been a wise word for this many a day!

*[Exit, followed by all but the DUKE OF  
BURGUNDY and LESTOVET.]*

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

It looks like rain, Lestovet; were it much  
Our van could hardly, in but one day's march,  
Arrive at Rosebecque; or if pressed so far,  
'T would tell against their strength upon the morrow,  
And stop them there.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

My lord, that there they 'll stop  
I doubt not; for I 'm inmostlÿ assured  
That we shall find upon the Lower Lis  
The total Flemish host: the Lower Lis  
They to the utterance will dispute; for there  
Their chief, who lacks not capability,  
Will justly deem their all to be impledged.  
'T were not amiss to slack the vanguard's pace  
And quicken up the rear, that like a worm  
The army's tail should gather to its head  
Before it move again.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

It may be well.

Your thought is mine touching the Flemish host ;  
 It will be found at Rosebecque, and, God willing,  
 It shall be left to feed the vultures there.  
 Where'er 't is met, that such will be its fate  
 I am as sure as that this glove is steel,  
 And I am Duke of Burgundy.

## TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

My lord,  
 That this vile Flemish scum, with coats of mail  
 Not worth three folds of cloth, should hold at bay  
 The spear-heads of Bourdeaux, were doubtless strange ;  
 And yet such things have happened. In their chief  
 Resides the spell which makes this herd so mad  
 To brave the chivalry of France in arms.  
 Their chief is either leagued with hell himself,  
 Or hath some potent necromancer's aid ;  
 If he be not the devil's feudatory,  
 He holds in soccage of a fiend that is.  
 You 'll see a hundred thousand spell-bound hearts  
 By art of witchcraft so affatuate,  
 That for his love they 'd dress themselves in dowlas  
 And fight with men of steel.

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

At Bruges, 't is true,  
 They dared but little less.

## TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Methinks, my lord,  
 The Knight of Heurlée is of late much altered.

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

It may be so ; what, since he joined us last ?

## TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

He hath a dirty, wild, neglected favor,  
 Is careless of his garb, gets drunk alone,  
 Lies late a-bed, as skulking from the day,  
 Curses his serving-men, avoids his friends,  
 Is quarrelsome and very meagre-witted  
 To what he was, save only in his gibes,  
 And them less savory seasoned ; what was once  
 An ounce of venom to a pound of mirth  
 Apportioned t' other way. In truth, he 's changed ;  
 A moody, heavy, sad-conditioned man,  
 That had from nature a most mounting heart,  
 And revelled formerly in joys to him  
 As native and as unsolicited  
 As to the lark her song.

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Whence comes this change ?

## TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

In truth, my lord, I know not.

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Hear you nothing ?

Is nothing said, surmised ? what think you, ha ?  
 Some secret discontent ?

## TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Not that, my lord.

More likely that he finds his knightly name  
 Something bedimmed, and held in less esteem,  
 By reason of his flight from Oudenarde :  
 For though he will not own it, 't is believed

He was at large upon his honor's pawn  
 To keep within the Flemish camp, and fled  
 Leaving the pledge behind him.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Nothing more ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

That is one wound ; but there is yet another.  
 Whether by word, or blow, or both, 't was dealt,  
 I know not, for he 's reticent and shy  
 'To a close question ; but this much I know,  
 That in the sleeping-chamber of a maid  
 (So called for courtesy) he was caught at night,  
 Concealed for no good purpose, whereupon  
 The regent (so by courtesy again —  
 As much a regent he as she a maid)  
 Who entertained the damsel for himself,  
 Moved by his anger, offered to the knight,  
 In act of threat, some dire indignity,  
 That ever since hath poisoned all the springs  
 At which his spirit drank, and is the cause,  
 If my conjecture err not, that he stands  
 Thé withered, blackened, and disfigured stump  
 We see him now.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

If that be all, his grief  
 Toucheth not us.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

The contrary, my lord ;  
 It touches more the enemy. Your grace  
 Has possibly had read to you the tale,

Long chronicled, of an Earl of Conversana,  
 Who in the day of battle met his death,  
 Not from his opposites in the field, though brave,  
 But from the hand of one who rode beside him.  
 An ancient grudge had treasured been till then  
 When death were doubly bitter, bringing down  
 Defeat and overthrow and loss of lands  
 And ruin to his friends. 'T were strange, my lord,  
 If such a fate befell Van Artevelde.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Yes, it were very strange.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Your grace was right ;  
 We shall have rain ; the sky looks wondrous heavy.  
 I know not if your grace gave heed to it,  
 But yesterday at noon, or thereabouts,  
 I heard some grumblings up amongst the clouds  
 That much resembled thunder : Pish ! quoth I,  
 The year is too far wearing from its prime  
 To speak in thunder now.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Who was that Earl ?

The Earl of Conversana ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

He, my lord.

But yet again I heard it, and more plain ;  
 And then, quoth I, if this be aught but thunder,  
 The god of thunder keeps a mocking-bird,  
 And it is that we hear.



'DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Upon what ground  
Deemed you the Earl of Conversana's fate  
Should figure forth Van Artevelde's ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

My lord ?

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

What mean you by this history of that Earl ?  
How doth it typify Van Artevelde's ?  
How lights the one the other ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Nay, my lord,  
'T was but a stumbling comment of my thought.  
When we have strained our foresight past its power  
Fantastic flashes oft will come across it,  
And whence we nothing know.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Come, come, Lestovet,  
Let us be open and direct. Thy drift ?  
What did thy thought contain, that being stirred  
Sent to the top this story of a murder ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

The honest truth to tell, my lord, a dream,  
Whether by good or evil spirit drawn  
Upon the vacant canvass of my sleep,  
Your grace shall be the judge, — a dream it was  
Showed me Van Artevelde upon his horse —  
Though whether mounted to survey the ground,  
Or to array his host, or lead the charge,

I saw not, — but there sitting as he gazed  
 Upon an undistinguishable blank,  
 Of anything or nothing — what I know not —  
 Struck from behind he fell — and with his fall  
 Vanished his host.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

This was a waking dream.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

I mused upon it waking.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

And this dream  
 Thou think'st will peradventure come to pass ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

If fate so orders it, my lord.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

And fate  
 Will find some human furtherance ; is it so ?

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Were it a thing well warranted, my lord,  
 It might be well attended.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Truly fate  
 Should do the king a singular good service  
 If this should happen.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Destiny, my lord,  
 Is oft-times worked upon by mighty names

Of dukes and regal potentates, whose power  
 May currently avouch her doubtful deeds,  
 If haply called in question.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Six o'clock

Were not too soon to be afoot to-morrow,  
 If, as is likely, there be waters out  
 Upon our lines of march.

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

There 's light at six.

Two words, my lord, were warranty enough.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Why, very well then ; six is late enough.  
 Tell my Lord Constable before he sleeps  
 To let the trumpets sound us a reveillée  
 Some half an hour to six.

[*Exit.*

TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET.

Well said, my lord.

Your grace's scruples master not your heart,  
 But serve your reputation. This is conscience ;  
 A herald marshalling each act its place  
 By its emblazonry and cognizance.  
 My Lord of Burgundy, your grace is wary,  
 So, by your leave, is 'Tristram of Lestovet.  
 If policy stick fast, be tried revenge ;  
 And what revenge more sharp, my Lord of Bourbon,  
 Than what is sprung of jealousy. That bites.  
 My lord, I 'll pluck your jealousy by the ear,

And if it wake not, why your grace's bosom  
Is not the serpent's nest I take it for.

[*Exit.*

### SCENE III.

THE FLEMISH CAMP ON THE EASTERN BANK OF THE  
LIS, BETWEEN DISSEGHEM AND ROSEBECQUE.

*Van Artevelde's Pavilion. ARTEVELDE and ELENA.*

ELENA.

What is it that disturbs you ?

ARTEVELDE.

Nothing, dearest ;

I am not disturbed.

ELENA.

You are not like yourself.

What took you from your bed ere break of day ?

Where have you been ? I know you're vexed with  
something.

Tell me, now, what has happened.

ARTEVELDE.

Be at rest.

No accident, save of the world within ;

Occurrences of thought ; 't is nothing more.

ELENA.

It is of such that love most needs to know.

The loud transactions of the outlying world  
Tell to your masculine friends: tell me your thoughts.

## ARTEVELDE.

They stumbled in the dusk 'twixt night and day.  
I dreamed distressfully, and waking knew  
How an old sorrow had stolen upon my sleep,  
Molesting midnight and that short repose  
Which industry had earned, so to stir up  
About my heart remembrances of pain  
Least sleeping when I sleep, least sleeping then  
When reason and the voluntary powers  
That turn and govern thought are laid to rest.  
Those powers by this nocturnal inroad wild  
Surprised and broken, vainly I essayed  
To rally, and unsubject the mind  
Took its direction from a driftless dream.  
Then passed I forth.

## ELENA.

You stole away so softly  
I knew it not, and wondered when I woke.

## ARTEVELDE.

The gibbous moon was in a wan decline,  
And all was silent as a sick man's chamber.  
Mixing its small beginnings with the dregs  
Of the pale moonshine and a few faint stars,  
The cold uncomfortable day-light dawned;  
And the white tents, topping a low ground-fog,  
Showed like a fleet becalmed. I wandered far,  
'Till reaching to the bridge I sate me down  
Upon the parapet. Much mused I there,

Revolving many a passage of my life,  
 And the strange destiny that lifted me  
 To be the leader of a mighty host  
 And terrible to kings. What followed then  
 I hardly may relate, for you would smile,  
 And say I might have dreamed as well a-bed  
 As gone abroad to dream.

ELENA.

I shall not smile ;  
 And if I did, you would not grudge my lips  
 So rare a visitation. But the cause,  
 Whate'er it be, that casts a shadow here,  
*(kissing his brow.)*

How should it make me smile ? What followed, say,  
 After your meditations on the bridge ?

ARTEVELDE.

I'll tell it, but I bid you not believe it ;  
 For I am scarce so credulous myself  
 As to believe that was, which my eyes saw —  
 A visual not an actual existence.

ELENA.

What was it like ; wore it a human likeness ?

ARTEVELDE.

That such existences there are, I know ;  
 For whether by the corporal organ framed,  
 Or painted by a brainish fantasy  
 Upon the inner sense, not once nor twice,  
 But sundry times, have I beheld such things  
 Since my tenth year, and most in this last past.

ELENA

What was it you beheld ?

ARTEVELDE.

To-day ?

ELENA.

Last night —

This morning — when you sate upon the bridge.

ARTEVELDE.

'T was a fantastic sight.

ELENA.

What sort of sight ?

ARTEVELDE (*after a pause*).

247  
Once in my sad and philosophic youth —  
For very philosophic in my dawn  
And twilight of intelligence was I —  
Once at this cock-crow of philosophy,  
Much tired with rest and with the stable earth,  
I launched my little bark and put to sea,  
Errant for geste and enterprise of wit  
Through all this circumnavigable globe.  
I cavilled at the elements — what is earth ?  
A huge congestion of unmethodized matter  
With but a skin of life — a mighty solid  
Which Nature, prodigal of space, provides  
For superficial uses : and what air ?  
A motion and a pressure : fire, a change ;  
And light the language of the things called dumb.

ELENA.

I have been told the studies of your youth

Were strangely thought of, but I'm well assured  
They never were unlawful.

## ARTEVELDE.

You are right.

My meditations in their outset wore  
The braveries of ignorance and youth,  
But cast them, and were innocent thenceforth ;  
For they were followed with a humble heart,  
Though an inquisitive ; and humbler still  
In spirit waxed they as they further went.  
The elements I left to contemplate.  
Then I considered life in all its forms,  
Of vegetable first, next zoöphytes,  
The tribe that dwells upon the confine strange  
"Twixt plants and fish : some are there from their mouth  
Spit out their progeny, and some that breed  
By suckers from their base or tubercles,  
Sea-hedgehog, madrepore, sea-ruff, or pad,  
Fungus, or sponge, or that gelatinous fish  
That, taken from its element, at once  
Stinks, melts, and dies a fluid ; — so from these,  
Through many a tribe of less equivocal life,  
Dividual or insect, up I ranged,  
From sentient to percipient — small advance —  
Next to intelligent — to rational next,  
So to half-spiritual human-kind,  
And what is more, is more than man may know.  
Last came the troublesome question — what am I ?  
A blade, a seedling of this growth of life  
Wherewith the outside of the earth is covered ;  
A comprehensive atom, all the world



In act of thought embracing ; in the world  
 A grain scarce filling a particular place !  
 'Thus travelled I the region up and down  
 Wherein the soul is circumscribed below ;  
 And unto what conclusion ?

ELENA.

You are so strange !  
 Tell what you saw, for I would hear of that.

ARTEVELDE.

I say to what conclusion came I then,  
 These winding links to fasten ?

ELENA.

I surmise  
 'To none ; such ramblings end where they begin.

ARTEVELDE.

Conclusions inconclusive, that I own ;  
 Yet, I would say, not vain, not nothing worth.  
 This circulating principle of life  
 That vivifies the outside of the earth  
 And permeates the sea ; that here and there  
 Awakening up a particle of matter,  
 Informs it, organizes, gives it power  
 To gather and associate to itself,  
 Transmute, incorporate other, for a term  
 Sustains the congruous fabric, and then quits it ;  
 This vagrant principle so multiform,  
 Ebullient here and undetected there,  
 Is not unauthorized, nor increate,  
 Though indestructible. Life never dies ;  
 Matter dies off it, and it lives elsewhere,

Or elsehow circumstanced and shaped ; it goes ;  
 At every instant we may say 't is gone,  
 But never it hath ceased ; the type is changed,  
 Is ever in transition, for life's law  
 To its eternal essence doth prescribe  
 Eternal mutability : and thus  
 To say I live — says, I partake of that  
 Which never dies : But how far I may hold  
 An interest indivisible from life  
 Through change (and whether it be mortal change,  
 Change of senescence, or of gradual growth,  
 Or other whatsoever 't is alike)  
 Is question not of argument, but fact.  
 In all men some such interest inheres ;  
 In most 't is posthumous ; the more expand  
 Our thoughts and feelings past the very present,  
 The more that interest overtakes of change  
 And comprehends, till what it comprehends  
 Is comprehended in eternity,  
 And in no less a span.

ELENA.

Love is eternal.  
 Whatever dies, that lives, I feel and know.  
 It is too great a thing to die.

ARTEVELDE.

So be it !

ELENA.

But, Artevelde, you shall not lead me off  
 Through by-ways from my quest. Touching this sight  
 Which you have seen ?

ARTEVELDE.

Touching this eye-creation ;

What is it to surprise us? Here we are  
 Engendered out of nothing cognizable.  
 If this be not a wonder, nothing is ;  
 If this be wonderful, then all is so.  
 Man's grosser attributes can generate  
 What is not, and has never been at all ;  
 What should forbid his fancy to restore  
 A being passed away? The wonder lies  
 In the mind merely of the wondering man.  
 Treading the steps of common life with eyes  
 Of curious inquisition, some will stare  
 At each discovery of nature's ways,  
 As it were new to find that God contrives.  
 The contrary were marvellous to me,  
 And till I find it I shall marvel not.  
 Or all is wonderful, or nothing is.  
 As for this creature of my eyes —

ELENA.

What was it?

The semblance of a human creature?

ARTEVELDE.

Yes.

ELENA.

Like any you had known in life?

ARTEVELDE.

Most like ;

Or more than like, it was the very same.  
 It was the image of my wife.

ELENA.

Of her!

The Lady Adriana ?

ARTEVELDE.

My dead wife.

ELENA.

Oh God ! how strange!

ARTEVELDE.

And wherefore ? — wherefore strange ?

Why should not fancy summon to its presence

This shape as soon as any ?

ELENA.

Gracious heaven !

And were you not afraid ?

ARTEVELDE.

I felt no fear.

Dejected I had been before : that sight

Inspired a deeper sadness, but no fear.

Nor had it struck that sadness to my soul

But for the dismal cheer the thing put on,

And the unsightly points of circumstance

That sullied its appearance and departure.

ELENA.

For how long saw you it ?

ARTEVELDE.

I cannot tell.

I did not mark.

ELENA.

And what was that appearance  
You say was so unsightly ?

ARTEVELDE.

She appeared  
In white, as when I saw her last, laid out  
After her death ; suspended in the air  
She seemed, and o'er her breast her arms were crossed ;  
Her feet were drawn together pointing downwards,  
And rigid was her form and motionless.  
From near her heart, as if the source were there,  
A stain of blood went wavering to her feet.  
So she remained inflexible as stone  
And I as fixedly regarded her.  
'Then suddenly, and in a line oblique,  
Thy figure darted past her, whereupon,  
Though rigid still and straight, she downward moved,  
And as she pierced the river with her feet  
Descending steadily, the streak of blood  
Peeled off upon the water, which, as she vanished,  
Appeared all blood, and swelled and weltered sore,  
And midmost in the eddy and the whirl  
My own face saw I, which was pale and calm  
As death could make it : — then the vision passed,  
And I perceived the river and the bridge,  
The mottled sky and horizontal moon,  
The distant camp, and all things as they were.

ELENA.

If you are not afraid to see such things,  
I am to hear them. Go not near that bridge ; —

You said that something happened there before —  
Oh, cross it not again, my dearest Philip.

ARTEVELDE.

The river cannot otherwise be passed.

ELENA.

Oh, cross it not!

ARTEVELDE.

That were a strange resolve,  
And to the French most acceptable: yes,  
You will be held of council with King Charles,  
Opposing thus my passage.

*Enter VAUCLAIRE and VAN RYK.*

Sirs, good day!  
You're soon astir for men that watched so late.

VAUCLAIRE.

And you, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

For me, my eyes untasked  
Close with the owl's and open with the lark's;  
Almost have they forgot the use of sleep.  
Have any scouts come in?

VAN RYK.

Yes, two, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

Ah! and with tidings? Nothing good, I know;  
But let me hear.

VAUCLAIRE.

In truth it is not good.  
They say that Poperinguen, Rousselaere,  
And Thorout have declared for France.

ARTEVELDE.

Three more!

That is a heavy falling-off, my friends,  
And arrantly ill-timed. Despatch! despatch!  
The cure for these defections must be found  
At any hazard. Forward must we press,  
And try our fortune ere another town  
Can find occasion to play foul.

VAUCLAIRE.

To-night,  
If I mistake not, they would reach us here;  
And better were it, in my mind, the stream  
Should be betwixt us, than as much dry land.

ARTEVELDE.

We will to council, and consider there  
What may be best. If they be here to-night,  
We may abide them. Whither away, Vauclaire?

VAUCLAIRE.

You'll wish, my lord, to have the scouts, and others  
That are informed, before you.

ARTEVELDE.

It were well.

[Exit VAUCLAIRE.]

And thou, Van Ryk, go round, and fetch to council  
The captains of the host.

[Exit VAN RYK.]

This troubles me.

Three towns, and two before! — a deadly blow!

ELENA.

Oh say not so; when once they know you 're near,  
The towns will all hold out — all will be well.  
Your presence ever righted your affairs,  
Whatever was amiss.

ARTEVELDE.

Two months ago,

My presence was a spell omnipotent  
That seemed of power to win me all the world.  
But now my fortune wears a faded beauty;  
And as some dame, her hour of conquest past,  
Repairs her ravaged charms, and here a tooth  
Replaces, where the flesh had else fallen in  
Making a wrinkle in the rounded cheek,  
And there the never more redundant locks  
Replenishes — so do I waste my pains  
In patching fortunes which are past their prime.  
It is a useless trouble; by my faith,  
A most unprofitable, idle charge.  
So soon as my advance made Courtray sure,  
Thence sent I with all speed to Rousselaere  
My best of chatelains, Walraven. Nay!  
Labor in vain! Precautions and endeavours  
Null, fruitless all!

ELENA.

Too anxious, Artevelde,  
And too impatient are you grown of late.  
You used to be so calm and even-minded,  
That nothing ruffled you.



ARTEVELDE.

I stand reprov'd.

'T is time and circumstance that tries us all;  
 And they that temperately take their start,  
 And keep their souls indifferently sedate  
 Through much of good and evil, at the last  
 May find the weakness of their hearts thus tried.  
 My cause appears more precious than it did  
 In its triumphant days.

ELENA.

You prize it more  
 The more it is endangered.

ARTEVELDE.

Even so.

A mother doats upon the reckling child  
 More than the strong; solicitous cares, sad watchings,  
 Rallies, reverses, all vicissitudes,  
 Give the affection exercise and growth.  
 So is it in the nursing a sick hope.

*Enter VAUCLAIRE'S LIEUTENANT.*

LIEUTENANT.

The captains are in council met, my lord,  
 And wait upon your leisure.

ARTEVELDE.

I am coming.

LIEUTENANT.

My master, Sir, has heard, he bade me say,  
 That Cassel has revolted.

ARTEVELDE.

What of that ?

LIEUTENANT.

He wished that you should know it first, my lord,  
And judge if it were fit to be disclosed  
Before the council.

ARTEVELDE.

Fit to be disclosed !

Pooh ! Tell the council I am coming. No ;  
I'll have no secrets. And for this forsooth,  
What is it but that we are in the moult,  
And here's a feather fallen. Say I come.

[Exit LIEUTENANT.]

Another stab, and in a vital part !  
For Cassel's defalcation is no less.  
'T were hard to keep a secret that is shared  
By yonder ape ; my nose took note of that,  
Admonished by the musk upon his beard  
As up and down his salutations tost it,  
Like a hen drinking. Well, it matters not.  
The battle now is all, and that to win  
Were to win back my losses ; that to lose  
Were to make all that I had lost before  
Into one sum of loss.

ELENA.

I feel so sure

That you will win the day !

ARTEVELDE.

You choose to say so.

Elena, think not that I stand in need

Of false encouragement. I have my strength,  
 Which, though it lie not in the sanguine mood,  
 Will answer my occasions. To yourself,  
 Though to none other, I at times present  
 The gloomiest thoughts that gloomy truths inspire,  
 Because I love you. But I need no prop ;  
 Nor could I find it in a tinsel show  
 Of prosperous surmise. Before the world  
 I wear a cheerful aspect, not so false  
 As for your lover's solace you put on ;  
 Nor in my closet does the oil run low,  
 Or the light flicker.

ELENA.

Lo now ! you are angry  
 Because I try to cheer you.

ARTEVELDE.

No, my love,  
 Not angry ; that I never was with you ;  
 But as I deal not falsely with my own,  
 So would I wish the heart of her I love  
 To be both true and brave ; nor self-beguiled,  
 Nor putting on disguises for my sake,  
 As though I faltered. I have anxious hours,  
 As who in like extremities hath not ?  
 But I have something stable here within  
 Which bears their weight.

*Enter VAN RYK.*

I keep the council waiting ;  
 Here comes Van Ryk to tell me so.

ELENA.

'T was I,  
 Master Van Ryk, that stayed him : 't is my fault,  
 And lest I make it more, I'll take me hence.

[Exit.

VAN RYK.

The council can abide your time, my lord.  
 There waits without a stranger just arrived,  
 Whom it were well you speak with ere you go.  
 He will not lift his beaver save to you,  
 But boldly calls himself an arrant traitor  
 That left the French last night, and seeks your camp  
 To sell you what he knows.

ARTEVELDE.

Desert to me !  
 I thought desertion looked the other way.  
 What is he like ?

VAN RYK.

I think he is of rank.  
 In his deportment knightly eyes might see  
 What they would gladly imitate.

ARTEVELDE.

Of rank !  
 This is the very madness of desertion !  
 Go, fetch him in.

[Exit VAN RYK.

Thorout and Poperinguen !  
 Cassel and Rousselaere ! And who, I wist,  
 Can keep a town's allegiance on its legs,  
 If not Walraven ?

*Re-enter VAN RYK, conducting SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE in armor, and wearing his visor closed.*

Give us leave, Van Ryk.

[*Exit VAN RYK.*]

Well, Sir! your pleasure? and say first by whom  
My camp is honored thus.

SIR FLEUREANT.

By one, my lord,  
Known to your host by all reproachful names  
Of miscreant, perfidious traitor, knave,  
Caitiff, and cur.

ARTEVELDE.

These, Sir, are shrewd additions,  
And not, I hope, deserved.

SIR FLEUREANT.

They have been so;  
Had not contrition washed desert with tears,  
They were so still. I am that perjured knight,  
Fleureant of Heurlée.

ARTEVELDE.

Art thou he indeed?  
What brings thee hither?

SIR FLEUREANT.

That which brings the proud  
To crave a low equality with dust;  
Which arms the lover lorn, the suitor cast, the sinner  
caught,  
The courtier supplanted, with the knife,

Or bowl, or halter — for their several griefs  
 The sovereign cures. My lord, what brings me here  
 Is of that grain — a loathing of my life ;  
 And, to come closer, such a sort of grief  
 As wrung Iscariot's heart when forth he went  
 And hung himself upon the field of blood,  
 Has made me thus (in my Aceldama  
 The sin of self-destruction partly spared)  
 To run upon your sword.

ARTEVELDE.

I am not bound  
 To find thee in a hangman. Go thy ways !  
 Thou art a slight, inconstant, violent man.

SIR FLEUREANT.

My lord, I come prepared for your disdain,  
 And slender were I in my penitence  
 If I should not confess it well bestowed.  
 But light and fickle as you justly deem me,  
 To one fixed purpose am I wedded now  
 For better and for worse — 't is to repair  
 The wrong that I have done you, and to die.

ARTEVELDE.

Sir, you may live or die, as likes you best.  
 It is your own affair ; to me all 's one.  
 The hurt your treachery has done to me  
 Can neither be repeated nor repaired.  
 No further harm can follow from your life,  
 Save in the sundering my time and thoughts  
 From matters of more moment.

## SIR FLEUREANT.

Pause, my lord,  
 Ere you pronounce me as inept for good  
 As I am harmless. Slight me as you may,  
 You cannot cast me in mine own esteem  
 More low than where I lie; I scorn myself  
 With such a bitterness as bars all taste  
 Of other's scorn. But from this bitter tree  
 Good fruitage, if so please you, you may pluck.  
 I have been well esteemed for soldiership,  
 And none can better know your enemy's host,  
 Where soft, where hard, where rotten, and where  
 sound,  
 Their hopes and fears, the order of their march,  
 Their counsels and intents. If all I know  
 With what small service I by deeds might render,  
 May be accepted as a sacrifice  
 My conscience to appease, I die content.

## ARTEVELDE.

Methinks I barely comprehend your conscience;  
 For sickened with one treasonable poison,  
 'T would seem to seek another for a cure.  
 What says your conscience on your king's behalf?

## SIR FLEUREANT.

It says, my lord, that there all claims are cancelled,  
 All ties dissolved; for never was a knight  
 Of prowess known, more thanklessly repaid,  
 More scurvily entreated, than by him  
 And by his ingrate uncles and his court  
 Was Fleureant of Heurlée.

ARTEVELDE.

Are you there!

Ah! now I understand you. Come this way;  
 My council is awaiting me. Ere night  
 I will speak further with you. Until when —

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE IV.

THE ROYAL PAVILION IN THE FRENCH CAMP AT MOUNT  
 DORRE, ON THE WESTERN BANK OF THE LIS, AT THE  
 DISTANCE OF A LEAGUE FROM ROSEBECQUE.

*The KING is discovered rising from supper, and bidding adieu to his uncles, the ADMIRAL OF FRANCE, the LORD OF COUCY, and a number of other guests who are leaving the Pavilion. SIR GUY OF BAVEUX is in attendance, and the DUKE OF BURGUNDY remains behind the others.*

THE KING.

My lords, we wish you all a sweet good night.  
 Sir Constable — he's gone — Sir Constable —  
 Run after him, Sir Guy, and bring him back.

[*Exit SIR GUY OF BAVEUX.*]

Uncle of Burgundy, what says your grace?  
 Shall it be now?

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Fair cousin, now or never.

[*Exit.*]



THE KING.

He will be mightily displeas'd! I swear  
I have no heart to speak it! Me! I quake.

*Re-enter* SIR GUY OF BAVEUX *with* SIR OLIVER OF  
CLISSON.

We call'd you back, Sir Oliver; you heard not.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Your grace shall pardon me; my ears are dull;  
A blow was dealt upon my head at Nantes  
That something stunned my hearing.

THE KING.

Sir, the love

We bear you is well known; and for this night  
And for the morrow, out of love and grace,  
We would that you should tarry by our person,  
And give your baton to my Lord of Coucy.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Most gracious Sir! I am amaz'd at this!  
I do beseech you hear me. Well I know  
No greater honor can your servant share  
Than to help guard your person; but, dear Sir,  
Think how the van should marvel, first to miss me  
At such a time! Sir, do not shake them so;  
Nor do not, I entreat your majesty,  
Unsettle what advis'dly was fix'd  
To be for your advantage. Be assur'd  
(I say it with all deference to such counsel  
As may have mov'd your majesty to this)  
The parting from your purposes thus late

Will put you in much peril. For myself  
 I have performed my function with such zeal  
 As doth not, I am bold to say, deserve  
 That I should be degraded.

THE KING.

Constable,  
 I know that you have well discharged your office  
 In my time and my father's; 't is the great trust  
 And sure affiance, that both he and I  
 Have ever placed in you, which makes me speak  
 To have you still beside me in this business.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Most noble Sir, you are so well begirt  
 With valiant men, and all is so well ordered,  
 That nought can be amended. Wherefore, Sir,  
 You and your council ought to be content.  
 I pray you, Sir, maintain me in mine office,  
 And if I err not, you will find no cause  
 To-morrow to repent it.

THE KING.

By St. Denis,  
 Good Constable, your pleasure shall be mine;  
 So exercise your office at your will,  
 And I will say no more; for by St. Denis,  
 You have seen further into this than I,  
 Or they that moved me in the matter first.  
 To-morrow come to me at mass.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Kind Sir,  
 Most willingly I will. God keep your grace!

All has been well disposed. The rear is up,  
 Save only skeletons of squadrons dropped  
 Upon our line of march : with tents and fires  
 They make a show of forces left behind,  
 So to beguile the Fleming, who will deem  
 We are not whole. God give your grace good rest !

THE KING.

Good night, Sir Constable. To bed, to bed !

*[Exeunt severally.]*

### SCENE V.

VAN ARTEVELDE'S PAVILION, IN HIS CAMP, ON THE  
 EASTERN SIDE OF THE LIS, AS IN THE LAST SCENE  
 BUT ONE.

*It is night. VAN ARTEVELDE is discovered sleeping  
 upon a low couch beside the embers of a fire. ELENA  
 enters.*

ELENA.

My lord — Van Artevelde — rise, Philip, rise !  
 I never knew him to sleep sound before !  
 Awake, my lord, awake !

ARTEVELDE.

Charge once again !

ELENA.

Awake, Van Artevelde !

ARTEVELDE.

Fall back! all's lost!  
Not by the bridge — NO, NO, NO, NO, NO.

ELENA.

Arouse yourself, Van Artevelde, awake!

ARTEVELDE (*awaking*).

Elena, love, fly, fly! Eh! what's the matter?

ELENA.

Nay, start not — it is only my surmise;  
But I could deem the Frenchman was afoot.

ARTEVELDE.

Why think you so? Van Ryk! what ho! Van Ryk!

ELENA.

I could not sleep, and sate without the tent,  
And sudden from the river seemed to rise  
A din of battle, mixed with lengthened shouts  
That sounded hollow like a windy thaw.  
I looked, and in the cloudy western sky  
There was a glow of red, and then the cries  
Were less confused, and I believed I heard  
'Mount Joye, St. Denis!' 'Flanders and the Lion!'  
With that I came to waken you.

ARTEVELDE.

Van Ryk! —

I'll go myself and hearken. Where's my page?  
Send for Van Ryk, I say.

(*He passes to the door of the tent.*)

ELENA.

Courage, my soul !  
 Play thou the heroine's part for one half hour,  
 And ever after take thy woman's way.

ARTEVELDE (*returning*).

Who is within ?

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

Bid them to sound my trumpet.

[*Exit the ATTENDANT, and soon after a reveillée is  
 sounded without. Then VAN RYK enters.*]

ARTEVELDE.

What watch is this we keep ? Here's battle joined  
 And none of us astir !

VAN RYK.

Not so, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

Heard ye not war-cries coming from the river ?

VAN RYK.

'T is true, my lord, both they that had the watch  
 And I myself, believed we heard a fight,  
 With shouts and hootings on the river's marge ;  
 But sending there, nought was there to be seen,  
 Nought to be heard, nor was a Frenchman stirring.  
 This thus made sure, we deemed to rouse yourself,  
 Or waken up the host, should bring us blame ;  
 Wherefore we let it pass.

ARTEVELDE.

'T is very strange.

VAN RYK.

It was as much a battle to the ear  
As sound could make it.

ELENA.

Saw you not besides  
A redness in the sky?

VAN RYK.

Yes, a red light;  
But that was cast from fires beneath the hedges  
Upon Mount Dorre.

ARTEVELDE.

This is a phantom fight.  
The ghosts of them that are to fall to-morrow  
(To-day I might have said, for day is breaking)  
Rehearse their parts. Van Ryk, we 'll sleep no more.  
My trumpet hath been sounded, and by this  
The host is arming. We will sleep no more  
Till we have tried our fortune. Bid Vauclaire  
And Ukenheim and Roosdyk, when they 're armed,  
Meeþ me below beside the willow-grove.  
Bid silence to be kept through all the host.  
What think'st thou of the day? Will it be bright?

VAN RYK.

A mist is spreading from the river up:  
I think, my lord, it shall not clear away  
Till sunrise, or it may be not till noon.

ARTEVELDE.

That is all well. Send me the captains there.

[Exit VAN RYK.]

I go, my fairest! Should I not return,  
 There's nothing here that I shall leave with pain,  
 Except thyself, my beautiful Elena!  
 What strange forgetfulness appears it now  
 So many mis-spent moments to have given  
 To anything but love! They're gone for ever  
 With all their wasted sunshine! Now is left  
 One moment but to spare, one word to speak;  
 Farewell, my dearest love!

ELENA.

Farewell, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

God and good angels guard thee through all time,  
 My ever-loved Elena! and if here  
 We meet no more, God grant us so to die  
 In peace with him, that we may meet hereafter.  
 Farewell, my best-beloved!

ELENA.

Farewell, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

And is it thus we part? Enough, enough;  
 Full hearts, few words. Yet I have more to say.  
 I might have wiselier done and kindlier too,  
 More righteously and clearly to my conscience,  
 Touching the tie between us, than I have.  
 For reparation of this fatal fault  
 I would that I might be preserved to-day;  
 If not, I know that I shall fall forgiven.

ELENA.

Try me no further, Artevelde ; go, go ;  
 If I should speak to thee one word of love  
 I could not hold myself on this side reason.  
 Go whilst I have my senses, Artevelde ;  
 Or stay and hear the passion of my heart  
 Break out, — and not in words ; if throes and shrieks  
 Thou wouldst be fain to witness, stay ; if not,  
 Content thee with one bitter word, adieu !

ARTEVELDE.

This fair hand trembles. Dearest, be thou calm ;  
 Calm and courageous. I commend thy silence.  
 Yonder 's the Knight of Heurlée ; he is coming  
 To summon me away.

ELENA.

Oh God ! I hate him !  
 Why is he with thee wheresoe'er thou goest ?  
 It sends a very horror to my heart  
 To see his fiendish face ! Why is it he  
 That comes to bring thee ?

ARTEVELDE.

Dearest, what imports it ?  
 Thou art disturbed with passion.

ELENA.

Oh ! I sink !  
 Call for my women.

ARTEVELDE.

Ho ! Cecile !



*Enter CECILE.*

There, take her.

CECILE.

She will be better soon, my lord.

ARTEVELDE.

Say worse :

'T is better for her to be thus bereft.  
 One other kiss on that bewitching brow,  
 Pale hemisphere of charms! Unhappy girl!  
 The curse of beauty was upon thy birth,  
 Nor love bestowed a blessing. Fare thee well!

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.

THE WESTERN SIDE OF THE LIS.

*A watch-fire in advance of the French Encampment.*

TWO SOLDIERS of the Watch.

FIRST SOLDIER (*sings*).

Four stakes and a mat  
 Make a very good house :  
 'T is ill-found, quoth the rat ;  
 Not a whit, said the louse.

SECOND SOLDIER.

The devil catch thy breath and mar thy singing!  
 The trumpets of the Flemish host may sound,  
 And nothing to be heard for thy fond ballads.

FIRST SOLDIER (*still singing*).

More happy are we than the count and the earl,  
 More happy are we than the gold-hatching churl,  
 Than the squire and frair, and seller and buyer,  
 Than he that is high, who still sees something higher :

Your ear and I'll tell you  
 The why and the wherefore —  
 He that hath nothing  
 Hath nothing to care for.

SECOND SOLDIER.

Be still, I say ; I hear a trumpet now.  
 Hark ! hush ! now — there — a trumpet clear as day !  
 'T is a reveillée ; bundle up your blankets,  
 And hie we to the captain of the watch.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

THE EASTERN SIDE OF THE LIS.

VAN ARTEVELDE, *his* PAGE, and SIR FLEUREANT  
 OF HEURLÉE.

ARTEVELDE.

They gather on the left. Fly to Vauclair,  
 And bid him when he sees me pass the bridge,  
 To drive his force along as though the devil  
 Were at his heels.

[*Exeunt* VAN ARTEVELDE and PAGE.

SIR FLEUREANT.

He is at yours, my lord.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE VIII.

A RISING GROUND, ENTRENCHED AND STRONGLY GUARDED, IN THE REAR OF THE FRENCH HOST.

*The KING, attended by the LORDS of COUCY and POICTIERS, the BASTARD OF ST. POULE, &c. MESSENGERS arriving and departing.*

THE KING.

Here comes another — well Sir — tell me — what ?

MESSENGER.

Sire, when Van Artevelde had crossed the bridge —

THE LORD OF COUCY.

What ! crossed the bridge alive ?

THE KING.

Well, well ; what then ?

MESSENGER.

He poured himself upon the Breton flank,  
Which stumbled back a step, but rallied soon,  
Spurred by the Lords of Saimpi and St. Just,  
Who hastened to the spot ; and there it is  
That now the battle rages.

THE KING.

Ho ! my horse !

My lords, do you your pleasures ; it is mine  
To get upon my horse and take what's going.

THE LORD OF POICTIERS.

Your majesty should bear in mind — another !

*Enter a* SECOND MESSENGER.

THE KING.

Whence com'st thou ? speak.

SECOND MESSENGER.

Sire, I was sent to say  
Van Artevelde was killed ; so went the cry  
Where I was — on the right ; but coming hither  
The knight of Saimpi did I jump withal  
Borne wounded to the rear, and learnt from him  
That Artevelde was living, proof whereof  
He bore upon his body, for his wounds  
Were got in fighting with him hand to hand.

THE KING.

My horse ! I'll fight him hand to hand myself !  
Stay you, my lords, or go ; I mount my horse.

THE LORD OF COUCY.

Have with your grace ! I cannot blame you much,  
Though you shall fret your uncles.

THE KING.

By St. Denis !  
Rather than stay I'll fight my uncles too.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE IX.

A PART OF THE FIELD ON THE WESTERN SIDE OF  
THE LIS.

VAN ARTEVELDE, *attended by several OFFICERS and  
PAGES.*

ARTEVELDE.

Who's here? Fly, Sibrand, to the further left;  
Bid Eversdyk and Alphen wheel their force  
To prop me on my flank.

[*Exit* SIBRAND.]

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

Run thou, De Roo —

MESSENGER.

Vauclaire, my Lord, is slain.

ARTEVELDE.

Is slain — hah — slain —  
Thou to the rear, De Roo, and bid Van Ryk  
Keep open passage on the bridge. Thou, Paul —

*Enter a* SECOND MESSENGER.

SECOND MESSENGER.

Roosdyk, my lord, is dying of his wounds.

ARTEVELDE.

I cannot help it. Keep the causeway clear,  
And summon Reehorst to my aid. We shake.  
The cry is, still, Van Artevelde is slain.  
Go make it known I live. Up with my cry!

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE X.

ANOTHER PART OF THE FIELD STILL ON THE WESTERN  
SIDE OF THE LIS.

THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY, SIR FLEUREANT OF  
HEURLÉE, and Followers.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Another charge like that — ill-sorted knaves!  
They stumbled on each other, each by each  
Pegged in and pinioned. Now they're loose enough.  
Another charge — they scurry to Mount Dorre.  
We'll drive them up the hill, and from the top  
Like a staved cask shall they be trundled down.  
What wait we for?

SIR FLEUREANT.

Truly the cask rings hollow;  
Yea, Sir, the wine is spilt that made them bold.  
Lo! yonder goes the king.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

What! breaking bounds!  
He must not be before us. Scale the hill.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE XI.

ANOTHER PART OF THE FIELD, ON THE SAME SIDE OF  
THE LIS, NEAR THE BRIDGE.

VAN ARTEVELDE *and* VAN RYK.

ARTEVELDE.

I bleed, Van Ryk. Can anything be done?  
For if there can, my spirit's sight is dimmed,  
And I discern it not.

VAN RYK.

To fly, my lord,

Is what remains.

ARTEVELDE.

To fly! Then mount my horse,  
And make away before the general flight  
Chokes up the bridge..

VAN RYK.

Not I, my lord. Your horse  
Should bear his proper burthen: mount yourself.

ARTEVELDE.

Never, Van Ryk. My errand upon earth  
Ends in this overthrow. Bind up my wound;  
Give me but strength again to reach the field,  
And I will carve myself a nobler death  
Than they designed me. God would not permit  
That I should fall by any hand so base  
As his who hurt me thus.

VAN RYK.

Whose hand was that?

ARTEVELDE.

Sir Fleureant's: he stabbed me on the bridge,  
And fled amongst the French.

VAN RYK.

O, monstrous deed!

ARTEVELDE.

I hid it whilst I could, which was not long;  
And being seen so tottering in my seat,  
The rumor ran that I was hurt to death,  
And then they staggered. Lo! we're flying all!  
Mount, mount, old man; at least let one be saved!  
Roosdyk! Vauclaire! the gallant and the kind!  
Who shall inscribe your merits on your tombs?  
May mine tell nothing to the world but this:  
That never did that prince or leader live,  
Who had more loyal or more loving friends!  
Let it be written that fidelity  
Could go no farther. Mount, old friend, and fly!

VAN RYK.

With you, my lord, not else. A fear-struck throng  
Comes rushing from Mount Dorre. 'Sir, cross the  
bridge.

ARTEVELDE.

The bridge! my soul abhors — but cross it thou;  
And take this token to my Love, Van Ryk.  
Fly for my sake in hers, and take her hence;  
It is my last command. See her conveyed



To Ghent by Olsen, or what safer road  
 Thy prudence shall descry. This do, Van Ryk —  
 Lo! now they pour upon us like a flood! —  
 Thou that didst never disobey me yet,  
 This last good office render me. Begone!  
 Fly whilst the way is free.

VAN RYK.

My lord, alas!  
 You put my duty to the sternest test  
 It ever yet endured; but I obey.  
 I do beseech you come across the bridge;  
 This rush of runaways —

ARTEVELDE.

Farewell, Van Ryk.

VAN RYK.

Fellows, stand back! What! see you not my lord?  
 Stand back, I say!

ARTEVELDE.

Ho! turn ye round once more!  
 Cry Artevelde! and charge them once again!  
 What! courage, friends! We yet can keep the bridge.  
 Three minutes but stand fast, and our reserves  
 Shall succour us. Heigh, heigh, Sir! who are you  
 That dares to touch me?

VAN RYK.

Nay, Sirs, nay, stand back.  
 (VAN RYK *is forced off by the crowd.*)

ARTEVELDE.

Shame on you, cowards! what! do you know me!  
 back!

Back, villains! will you suffocate your lord?  
 Back, or I'll stab you with my dagger. Oh!  
 Give me but space to breathe! Now God forgive me!  
 What have I done?—why such a death?—why thus—  
 Oh! for a wound as wide as famine's mouth,  
 To make a soldier's passage for my soul!

[Exit VAN ARTEVELDE, borne along in the  
 rout towards the bridge.]

---

SCENE XII.

THE SAME.

*Enter the DUKES OF BURGUNDY and BOURBON, with  
 Followers on the one side, and SIR LOIS OF SANKERE,  
 with Followers on the other.*

SANKERE.

Halt ye a space, my lords, ye cannot pass:  
 The bridge has broken down beneath the weight  
 Of them that fly.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

A lath should bear us up,  
 We are so light of heart, so light of heel!  
 It was the leaden spirit of defeat  
 That brake the bridge. Shoot me a plank across,  
 And see if I shall strain it!

SANKERE.

Stay, my lord;  
 They're pushing beams athwart the shattered arch,

And presently the passage shall be safe  
 For all the host ; but farther down the stream  
 'There are some boats, though but a few, for those  
 Who would be foremost.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

I am of them. Who follows ?

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE XIII.

A PART OF THE FIELD ON THE EASTERN SIDE OF  
 THE LIS.

*It is strewn with the dead and wounded, and other wreck  
 of the battle. In front is the body of VAN ARTEVELDE.  
 ELENA is kneeling beside it. VAN RYK and one of  
 VAN ARTEVELDE'S Pages are standing near. Trum-  
 pets are heard from time to time at a distance.*

VAN RYK.

Bring her away. Hark ! hark !

PAGE.

She will not stir.

Either she will not hear me when I speak,  
 Or will not seem to hear.

VAN RYK.

Leave her to me.

Fly, if thou lov'st thy life, and make for Ghent.

[*Exit PAGE.*]

Madam, arouse yourself ; the French come fast :

Arouse yourself, sweet lady ; fly with me.  
I pray you hear : it was his last command  
That I should take you hence to Ghent by Olsen.

ELENA.

I cannot go on foot.

VAN RYK.

No, lady, no,  
You shall not need ; horses are close at hand.  
Let me but take you hence. I pray you come.

ELENA.

Take *him* then too.

VAN RYK.

The enemy is near  
In hot pursuit ; we cannot take the body.

ELENA.

The body ! Oh !

*Enter DUKE OF BURGUNDY.*

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

What hideous cry was that ?  
What are ye ? Flemings ? Who art thou, old Sir ?  
Who she that flung that long funereal note  
Into the upper sky ? Speak.

VAN RYK.

What I am,  
Yourself have spoken. I am, as you said,  
Old and a Fleming. Younger by a day  
I could have wished to die ; but what of that ?  
For death to be behind-hand but a day  
Is but a little grief.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Well said, old man.

And who is she ?

VAN RYK.

Sir, she is not a Fleming.

*Enter the KING, the DUKE OF BOURBON, the EARL OF FLANDERS, SIR FLEUREANT OF HEURLÉE, the CONSTABLE, TRISTRAM OF LESTOVET, the LORD OF COUCY, and many other Lords and Knights, with Guards and Attendants.*

THE KING.

What is your parley, uncle ; who are these ?

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Your majesty shall ask them that yourself ;  
I cannot make them tell.

THE KING.

Come on, come on !  
We've sent a hundred men to search the field  
For Artevelde's dead body.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Sire, for that  
You shall need seek no further ; there he lies.

THE KING.

What, say you so ? What ! this Van Artevelde ?  
God's me ! how sad a sight !

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

But are you sure ?  
Lift up his head.

SIR OLIVER OF CLISSON.

Sir Fleureant, is it he ?

SIR FLEUREANT.

Sirs, this is that habiliment of flesh  
 Which clothed the spirit of Van Artevelde  
 Some half an hour agone. Between the ribs  
 You'll find a wound, whereof so much of this  
 (*Drawing his dagger.*)  
 As is imbrued with blood, denotes the depth.

THE KING.

Oh me ! how sad and terrible he looks !  
 He hath a princely countenance. Alas !  
 I would he might have lived, and taken service  
 Upon the better side !

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

And who is she ?

(*ELENA raises her head from the body.*)

DUKE OF BOURBON.

That *I* can answer : she's a traitress vile,  
 The villain's paramour.

SIR FLEUREANT.

Beseech you, Sir,  
 Believe it not ; she was not what you think.  
 She did affect him, but in no such sort  
 As you impute, which she can promptly prove.

ELENA (*springing upon her feet.*)

'T is false ! thou liest ! *I was* his paramour.

## DUKE OF BOURBON.

Oh, shameless harlot! dost thou boast thy sin?  
 Aye, down upon the carrion once again!  
 Ho, guards! dispart her from the rebel's carcase,  
 And hang it on a gibbet. Thus and thus  
 I spit upon and spurn it.

ELENA (*snatching ARTEVELDE'S dagger from its sheath*).

Miscreant soul!

Black-hearted felon!

(*Aims a blow at the DUKE OF BOURBON, which SIR FLEUREANT intercepts.*)

Aye, dost baulk me! there —  
 As good for thee as him!

(*Stabs SIR FLEUREANT, who falls dead.*)

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Seize her! secure her! tie her hand and foot!  
 What! routed we a hundred thousand men  
 Here to be slaughtered by a crazy wench!

(*The guards rush upon ELENA; VAN RYK interposes for her defence; after some struggle, both are struck down and slain.*)

## DUKE OF BOURBON.

So! curst untoward vermin! are they dead?  
 His very corse breeds magots of despite!

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

I did not bid them to be killed.

## CAPTAIN OF THE GUARD.

My lord,

They were so sturdy and so desperate  
We could not else come near them.

## THE KING.

Uncle, lo!

The Knight of Heurlée, too, stone dead.

## SANKERE.

By Heaven,

This is the strangest battle I have known!  
First we've to fight the foe, and then the captives.

## DUKE OF BOURBON.

Take forth the bodies. For the woman's corse,  
Let it have Christian burial. As for his,  
The arch-insurgent's, hang it on a tree  
Where all the host may see it.

## DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

Brother, no;

It were not for our honor, nor the king's,  
To use it so. Dire rebel though he was,  
Yet with a noble nature and great gifts  
Was he endowed: courage, discretion, wit,  
An equal temper and an ample soul,  
Rock-bound and fortified against assaults  
Of transitory passion, but below  
Built on a surging subterranean fire  
That stirred and lifted him to high attempts  
So prompt and capable, and yet so calm,  
He nothing lacked in sovereignty but the right;  
Nothing in soldiership except good fortune.



Wherefore with honor lay him in his grave,  
And thereby shall increase of honor come  
Unto their arms who vanquished one so wise,  
So valiant, so renowned! Sirs, pass we on,  
And let the bodies follow us on biers.

( Wolf of the weald, and yellow-footed kite,  
( Enough is spread for you of meaner prey.  
Other interment than your maws afford  
Is due to these. At Courtray we shall sleep,  
And there I'll see them buried side by side.

[*Exeunt.*

THE END.

## NOTES.

---

PREFACE, Page xiv.

*Lord Byron's conception of a hero is an evidence, not only of scanty materials of knowledge from which to construct the ideal of a human being, but also of a want of perception of what is great or noble in our nature.*

I WILL beg to extract here, as an appendix to my Preface, three or four stanzas from the conclusion of a poem written above six years ago, which will support the assertion that some of the opinions I have expressed, obnoxious as I am afraid they may at first sight appear to the charge of presumption, are not hastily hazarded, or now first adopted. The poem, from which the extracts are taken, was written in anticipation of the accomplishment of the work now published, and was intended as a poem, or poetical introduction to it. But writing then with no more than a distant and indistinct prospect of publication, I was betrayed into a sort of domestic egoism, which, now that the time comes to print, I do not venture to present to public notice. The stanzas which follow, are, I trust, unobjectionable on this score; and they contain (besides the expression of opinion to which I have adverted) an acknowledgment of intellectual obligations which I am unwilling to omit, and a tribute of respect and admiration, which I confess that it is a pleasure to me to pay in public; and which is not improperly so paid, because the

person spoken of is one with whom it cannot be said that the Public have no concern.

\* \* \* \* \*

Then learned I to despise that far-famed school  
 Who place in wickedness their pride, and deem  
 Power chiefly to be shown where passions rule,  
 And not where they are ruled: in whose new scheme  
 Of heroism, self-government should seem  
 A thing left out, or something to contemn, —  
 Whose notions, incoherent as a dream,  
 Make strength go *with* the torrent, and not stem,  
 For 'wicked and thence weak' is not a creed for them.

I left these passionate weaklings: I perceived  
 What took away all nobleness from pride,  
 All dignity from sorrow; what bereaved  
 Even genius of respect; they seemed allied  
 To mendicants that by the highway side  
 Expose their self-inflicted wounds, to gain  
 The alms of sympathy — far best denied.  
 I heard the sorrowful sensualist complain,  
 If with compassion, not without disdain.

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* two friends

Lent me a further light, whose equal hate  
 On all unwholesome sentiment attends,  
 Nor whom may genius charm where heart infirm offends.  
 In all things else contrarious were these two:  
 The one, a man upon whose laurelled brow  
 Grey hairs were growing! glory ever new  
 Shall circle him in after years as now,  
 For spent detraction may not disavow

The world of knowledge with the wit combined,  
 The elastic force no burthen ere could bow,  
 The various talents and the single mind,  
 Which give him moral power and mastery o'er mankind.

His sixty summers — what are they in truth ?  
 By Providence peculiarly blest,  
 With him the strong hilarity of youth  
 Abides, despite grey hairs, a constant guest.  
 His sun has veered a point toward the west,  
 But light as dawn his heart is glowing yet ;  
 That heart the simplest, gentlest, kindest, best,  
 Where truth and manly tenderness are met  
 With faith and heavenward hope, the suns that never set.

\* \* \* \* \*

Thus nurtured, and thus disciplined in thought  
 By kindred and associates, strange it were  
 If work of mine, though faint, should not have caught  
 Some color of transmitted light, some stir  
 Of congruous emotion. If I err  
 In deeming that some portion of my tale  
 Impersonates the virtues I aver  
 To hold in admiration, — if I fail  
 In this, then what is writ will be of no avail.

But if, from time to time, upon the page  
 Some token of these higher aims be traced,  
 Some fair ideal, borrowed from an age  
 Of ruder, but of less emasculate taste,  
 Some nook whence Nature hath not been displaced  
 For Fashion's sake ; if mine it be to feed  
 To a robust complexion, not to waste  
 With idle stimulation them that read,  
 Then forth upon my way I go with God to speed !

## PREFACE, Page x.

*“Poetry of which sense is not the basis, though it may be excellent of its kind, will not long be reputed to be poetry of the highest order.”*

Till this moment, when recurring for another purpose to Mr. Wordsworth's preface to his poems, and to Mr. Coleridge's remarks upon them, in his “*Biographia Literaria*,” I was not aware for how many of my tenets I was indebted to those admirable specimens of philosophical criticism. The root of the matter is to be found in them.

## PREFACE, Page xi.

*“He (Lord Byron) was in knowledge merely a man of Belles-lettres.”*

I am aware that Lord Byron made out a long catalogue of books read in his early youth. I cannot help feeling persuaded that there must be mistakes in the enumeration. I have too high an opinion of Lord Byron's natural capacity to allow myself to believe that he could have read some of the profound and philosophical works mentioned in his catalogue without deriving benefit from them as a writer.

## PART I., Act I., Scene I., Page 35.

*“For truly there are here a sort of crafts  
So factious still and obstinate,” &c.*

It is curious to observe in these trade unions of the fourteenth century, compared with those of the present day, the tendency of society, from time to time, in conjunctures when the influences of physical force, commercial wealth, and prescriptive polity, reach certain approximations to an equipoise, to throw itself into something like the same forms and divisions. Our own political unions, and the effects which they are calculated to produce, have never been described in a more philosophic spirit and temper, or more forcibly, than in the speech from which the following extract is taken:—

“That Political Unions are an evil, no one is readier to declare than I. I do not hesitate to say that such institutions are fraught with destruction more than can be calculated, destruction to all government, destruction to all property, destruction to all freedom, destruction to the very nature and characters of Englishmen. I should hate to live in a country in which such institutions predominated, (and predominate they must if they exist at all,) as I should hate to live in a country in which great measures were concerted silently and executed speedily; in which men should meet together in multitudes, to agree upon secret schemes, and spread them abroad secretly and put them in operation secretly; in which all individual liberty and all individual responsibility, without which no man can be good or wise, or strong or happy, should be bowed into uniformity with the general will, (if through fear, bad enough, if willingly, still worse,) should be merged and melted down and mingled up into that great mass of ordered and digested opinion, in which alone consists the much boasted strength of these much boasted Political Combinations; as I should hate, in short, to live in a land where men should act in multitudes, and think in multitudes, and be free in multitudes. . . . . I do not deny that such a nation might triumph over every outward obstacle; I do not deny that, in such a nation, commerce might flourish and wealth increase; that she might be full, even to fatness, with the glory of political wealth, and political conquest, and political independence. But I do deny that any one of these things, or all these things together, make up one item in the happiness, the virtue, the wisdom, or the real freedom of a nation. I do deny that, for all these things, I would consent to make England a nation of politicians; say rather of political instruments, of men, that the whole together might be powerful, consenting to be each man a slave. I say, I do deny, that for centuries of such wealth, such glory, and such independence, I would consent to barter one hour of that domestic comfort, and domestic freedom, household strength, and household virtue, with which it is our boast to have been blest above other nations, and which all come of the sacred inheritance of *individual freedom*, the free thought of the free soul, for which the worst of occa-

sional convulsions and calamities are not too dear a price to pay."

After some account of the manner in which these unions are generated, he proceeds:—

"And there are not wanting men wiser in their generation, with other and further views, whose game it is to excite and inflame these discontents; men who, if they can get any hold by which to sway this 'huge and fiery mass of passion,' from being the outcasts of society can make themselves its terrors; and there is no lack of meaning and stirring phrases which spread anger and disobedience like wildfire from eye to eye and from mouth to mouth. And then begins the vast and vital disorder; for as yet we have traced it only to its beginnings; then begins the fearful and ever-widening breach between the very rich and the very poor; the poor looking on the rich with hatred springing from sense of wrong, the rich upon the poor, first with cold and distant pride, then with the angry and jealous alarm of pride frightened from its propriety."

I have quoted these passages from an anonymous pamphlet, published by Ridgway in 1832, entitled "Substance of a Speech against Political Unions, delivered in a Debating Society in the University of Cambridge." It is a singular trait of the times, that a speech containing so much of sagacity and mature reflection as is to be found in this exercitation, should have been delivered in an academical debating club, and should have passed away in a pamphlet, which, as far as I am aware, attracted no notice. Time and place consenting, a brilliant Parliamentary reputation might be built upon a title of the merit.

PART I., Act I., Scene III., Page 54.

This description of Launoy's fate is little more than a versification of the following account of it:—

"When the Earl of Flanders came to the minster, and saw them of Ghent fly into the church, he commanded the minster to be set on fire, which was quickly done, and the fire soon mounted to the covering of the minster. There they of Ghent died in great pain, for they were burnt alive, and such of them

as issued out were slain, and cast into the fire again. John Launoy, who was in the steeple, seeing himself about to be burnt, cried to them without, 'Ransom! Ransom!' and offered his coat, which was full of florins, to save his life; but they without did but laugh at him, and said, 'John, come out at some window and speak with us, and we shall receive you: make a leap, as you have made some of us leap within this year; it behoveth you so to do.' When John Launoy found he could not escape, and that the fire came so near him, he thought he had better be slain than burnt, and so he leaped out at a window among his enemies, and was there received on spears and swords, and cut to pieces, and cast into the fire again. Thus ended John Launoy." — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cix.

PART I., Act I., Scene IV., Page 63.

"*Your BOWER lacks tendance.*"

It occurs to me (too late for correction in the text) that the use of this word in the modern sense of an arbour, is wrong. In the middle ages it meant (I think) only a lady's chamber, or withdrawing room.

PART I., Act I., Scene IV., Page 70, and PART I., Act II., Scene I., Page 94.

The history of Jacques Van Artevelde, the father, is more generally known to the English reader than that of Philip, the son; for his power lasted longer, and he was in close political connection with Edward the Third of England. "To speak properly," says Froissart, "there never was in Flanders, nor in any other country, prince, duke, or other, that ruled a country so peaceably, so long as this James D'Arteville ruled Flanders." His downfall was brought about by an attempt to stretch his power to the extent of substituting the issue of Edward the Third for that of the Earl of Flanders, in the inheritance of that territory. The good town of Ghent had long supported him in usurping the Earl's actual authority and dominion; but they revolted against the idea of altering the legitimate descent. "When he



returned, he came into Ghent about noon; they of the town knew of his coming, and many were assembled together in the street as he was to pass, and when they saw him they began to murmur, and said—‘Behold yonder Great Master who would order all Flanders after his pleasure, which is not to be suffered.’ They also whispered through all the town, that James D’Arteville had received for nine years all the revenues of Flanders, without giving any account, and thereby hath maintained his dignity, and also sends great riches out of the country, into England privately. These expressions fired them of Ghent, and as he rode through the street he perceived that they were incensed at him, for such as had formerly made reverence to him as he passed, now turned their backs to him, and entered their houses: then he began to be alarmed, and as soon as he had entered his house, he fastened his gates, doors, and windows; this was scarcely done before the street was full of men, and especially those of the smaller crafts. There they assailed his house both behind and before, and broke it open: he and his people within defended themselves for a long time, and slew and wounded many without; but finally he could not sustain it, for three parts of the townsmen were at the assault. When James saw that he was so severely oppressed, he came to a window with great humility, bare-headed, and said, with fair language—‘Good people, what ails you? why are you so much incensed against me? how have I displeased you? inform me, and I shall make you amends.’ Then those who heard him answered all with one voice—‘We desire an account of the great treasure of Flanders that you have sent away, without any reason.’ Then James answered meekly, and said—‘Certainly, Sirs, I never took any of the treasure of Flanders; withdraw quietly into your houses, and return in the morning, and I will give you so good an account, that you should reasonably be satisfied.’ Then they all answered—‘Nay, we will have an account immediately, you shall not escape us so; we know that you have sent great riches into England without our knowledge, therefore you shall die.’ When he heard this, he clasped his hands, and weeping said—‘Sirs, such as I am you have made me, and you have

sworn to me before this to defend me against all persons, and now you would slay me without reason; you may do it if you please, for I am but one man among so many; for God's sake take better advice, and remember the time past, and consider the great favors and courtesy that I have done you and your town: you know that commerce was nearly annihilated in this country, and by my means it is recovered; I have also governed you peaceably; for during my government ye have had all things as you could desire; corn, riches, and all sorts of merchandize.' Then they all exclaimed as with one voice, 'Come down to us, and talk not so high, and give us an account of the great treasure of Flanders, that you have controlled so long without accounting for, which is unbecoming an officer to do, to receive the goods of his lord, or of a country, without accounting.' When James saw that he could not appease them, he drew in his head and closed his window, and so thought to steal out by the back door, into a church that adjoined his house, but four hundred persons had entered into his house; and finally there he was taken and slain." — *Froissart*, vol. i., chap. cxv.

PART I., Act I., Scene VII., Page 85.

*"Nor heeds the weltering of the PLANGENT wave."*

I have adopted this (as it sounds to my ears) very euphonious epithet, from a little poem called "The Errors of Ecstacie," by Mr. Darley — a poem which is full of this sort of euphony, and remarkable on other accounts.

PART I., Act I., Last Scene, Page 88.

*"Lives, lives, my lord, take freely;  
But spare the lands and burgages and moneys.  
The father dead shall sleep and be forgotten;  
The patrimony gone, that makes a wound  
That's slow to heal; heirs are above-ground ever."*

It would be difficult to find in the works of Machiavelli a more characteristic passage than that from which the above is taken: "Deve nondimeno il principe farsi temere in modo che, se non

acquista l'amore e' fugga l'odio ; perche può molto bene star insieme, esser temuto e non odiato ; et quando pure gli bisognasse procedere contro al sangue di qualcuno, farlo quando vi sia giustificazione conveniente, et causa manifesta ; ma sopra tutto astenersi dalla robba d'altri, perche gli uomini dimenticano più tosto la morte del padre, che la perdita del patrimonio." — *Principe*, cap. xvii.

PART I., ACT I., Last Scene, Page 91.

*" You know, my lord, the humor we of Ghent  
Have still indulged."*

A hundred years produced little change in the humor of the people of Ghent, whose dispositions towards peace, and a dutiful demeanor, appear to have been as equivocal under the House of Burgundy in the fifteenth century, as under that of Flanders in the fourteenth. An indication of this is to be found in a whimsical proceeding of theirs related by Commynes as having taken place upon the accession of Charles the Bold. Ghent had been in rebellion against his father, Philip, but had been brought to terms, and had never, whilst most disaffected to his father, shown any unfriendly dispositions towards himself; for it was indeed a proverb, that "*Ceulx de Gand aymoient bien le filz de leur Prince, mais le Prince non jamais.*" Charles, relying upon his former relations with Ghent, and upon the assurances of the magistrates and rich citizens that he would be received with the utmost joy and good-will, made a solemn entry into the town on the morning of the 28th of June, 1467. He was, to all appearance, exceedingly well received. The streets were hung with the most beautiful tapestries, stages were erected from place to place on which mysteries were performed, the chimes were rung out from all the steeples, and there was every possible demonstration of loyalty and respect. One of the chief grievances of the people had been a certain tax upon corn, which had been levied to pay the expenses of a former rebellion, and which was continued, though the people were persuaded that all those expenses had been long since paid. Even this complaint, however, was scarcely heard, or but very softly uttered in the uni-

versal happiness which appeared to prevail upon the entry of the Duke into his good town of Ghent. The day of his entry happened to be that of the celebration of the martyrdom of St. Liévin, who was the favorite Saint of the mean crafts. According to their-use on this day they carried him in procession in his shrine to the village of Holtheim, the spot of his martyrdom, where they passed the night with him, taking him back the next day to the Church of St. Bavon, which was his ordinary place of abode. Directly on their way back through the Market-place to the Church, stood the house which had been erected for the purpose of levying there the obnoxious gabelle upon corn. They knocked the shrine against the wall of the house, and then, alleging that the Saint would not turn out of the straight road, they forthwith levelled the building to the ground, and carried him over the ruins. The indignation of Charles the Bold may easily be imagined; but for once he was brought to feel the necessity of placing his temper under restraint, and after incurring some danger by giving way to the first burst of anger, he betook himself to dissimulation and fair words, and departed from the city ostensibly in peace. — *Commines*, lib. ii., chap. iv., and *Barante*, vol. ix., p. 7.

PART I., Art II., Scene I., Page 94.

*“And wenches who were there said Artevelde  
Was a sweet name and musical to hear.”*

I have thought it expedient to confine to the female portion of the White-Hood party this motive for placing themselves under the command of Van Artevelde; though the historian relates, without any such limitation, that he was chosen for the reason, amongst others, that his name was “*Le mieulx seant à prononcer.*”

PART I., Act II., Scene III., Page 106.

*“And thou who wert a gentle-hearted man,  
Must lead these monsters where they will.”*

It is a remark of Cicero that, “*bellorum civilium ii semper sunt exitus, ut non ea solùm fiant quæ velit victor, sed etiam ab iis mos gerendus sit, quibus adjutoribus parta sit victoria.*”

## PART I., Act II., Last Scene, Page 140.

“*Think of your mariners.*”

The relatives of the Earl's bailiff, who had been slain by the White-Hoods, as Froissart says, “*somewhat* revenged the death of their cousin, by seizing the crews of forty ships belonging to Ghent, and putting out their eyes.”—*Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. lxxxviii.

## PART I., Act IV., Scene, I., Page 170.

I have borrowed, in this place, a line from a poem by a near relative, who died several years ago, at an early age. I will take this opportunity of printing that poem, persuaded that by those who can appreciate the strain of thought and feeling which pervades it, the indulgence of a natural wish to preserve it will not be thought unreasonable.

## MONOLOGUE. Scene, in the Mountains.

(*The Speaker above one hundred years old*)—*Time, early Morning.*

Dawn smiles ; around the golden isle of heaven  
 Break the white-rushing clouds in paler spray ;  
 Till down among the eastern heights she sets,  
 And night, a second night, a paler shade,  
 Van-courier of the morn, is on the skies.  
 Twilight with trembling fingers sketches there  
 Vast outlines, mountains summitless, grey wastes,  
 Now caught against the clouds, and now all dark.  
 Forth from the bosoms of those shadowy mounds  
 Launch the fresh breezes on their early voyage,  
 And the dark eaglets from their aeries watch  
 The nearing sun. . . . Sounds, that are gathering round me,  
 And the half-distinguished landscape's glimmerings,  
 Rouse in my heart the waning thoughts of times  
 That have past far away. . . . a concourse strange  
 As haunts that eve when charnels give to air  
 Their white-robed tenantry ; — worn out Remembrance

Puts forth her light, that, like the eternal lamps  
Of tombs, burns only to illuminate  
Sepulchral gloom, and cheer cold isolation.  
These oaks have waved here for a hundred years  
Since I first knew this vale, and they which flung  
Around, below, a wide and rustling shade,  
A green pavilion, broad and beautiful,  
Have withered into leafless stocks ; . . . . . alas !  
There is no blessing in so long a life ; . . . .  
I left this valley yet a little child,  
And have returned beneath a load of years ;  
Men with grey beards look up to me ; yea dotards  
Ask of their ancestry from me ; and dames  
Pray in their folly that their infants reach  
Such age as mine ; and the babes gaze with awe  
At the old Gaffer's long white beard, and ask  
Who in the valleys is so old as he ?  
Men have seen changes — mighty changes wrought —  
And in few years — and over potent states —  
Have not the raven and the vulture dwelt  
Among the empty stones of Judah's towers ?  
Have not the desert-rushes waved in Tyre ?  
Babes held the principedom of Jerusalem ?  
Slaves worn the purple of most mighty Rome ?  
Aye ! and the growth of yonder mountain firs  
Where I was wont to have my gay expanse  
Of garden-ground, gives me a deeper sadness  
Than mournful tales of ruined monarchies,  
Dismantled cities, nations past away. —  
Morn of white front and pearly eye ! that now  
Thy kindly salutations giv'st to all,  
I cannot win one joyful thought from thee :  
I view thy roseate chaplettings of cloud  
With an untempered fancy, the cold spleen  
And heartless weariness of extreme age,  
A weak recoil from all that's gay and fair ;  
For the young mind clings at the first approach

Of Pleasure's magnet ; but we travel on,  
 Creep to the further pole, and are repelled.  
 Life's earliest fountain-gush is pure from heaven,  
 And all the after-stream with earth-sprung taints,  
 And gathering lutulence, made foul : and mine  
 Hath spread into a dark, unhealthful marsh ;  
 An obstinate stagnation. — They are all,  
 All gone ; — with whom how fondly once I loved  
 To seek this height and wander through yon dells ;  
 None left upon the earth ; all laid beneath ; —  
 Death, like a kindly shepherd, came to them,  
 When they were straying in the vale of years,  
 And took them to their fold, and bade them sleep ;  
 But he hath been to me a jealous master ;  
 Hovering for years around me, with approach  
 Enfeebling, but forbearing still to touch,  
 He tempts, with outstretched hand, and disappoints.  
 'T is hard — to feel cheeks wrinkle-ploughed like these  
 Wetted with tears — Not yet ! I have not yet,  
 Old as I am, reached second infancy ;  
 My soul hath lost her fire, but not her force.  
 Dry up, thou sun, these drops ! Remembrance struck  
 This arid rock, and they have gushed unbidden. —  
 But that is o'er ; and high Resolve hath set  
 Her seal upon the heart ; and I will gaze,  
 With a clear eye and steady lip, around,  
 On hill and heath, that are the cenotaphs  
 Of those I will not name again. — 'T is day . . . .  
 Back to the vale ; to men ; to life ! I hear,  
 Within me, warm and urgent thanksgivings  
 For the gifts left me ; the time-scorning power,  
 And constancy of thought ; — the unchanged command,  
 And might of the invulnerable mind.

He died within two or three days after he had completed his twentieth year. If a powerful reasoning faculty and an ardent and affluent imagination, be, as I believe, the constituents of true genius, he was possessed of, it.

PART I., Act V., Scene VIII., Page 230, *et seq.*

It is impossible to represent the Earl's adventures upon his defeat at Bruges, with more of dramatic effect than belongs to them, as related by Froissart : —

“ In the mean time that the Earl was at his lodging, and sent forth the clerks of every ward from street to street, to have every man to draw to the market-place to recover the town, they of Ghent pursued their enemies so fiercely, that they entered into the town with them of Bruges; and as soon as they were within the town, the first thing they did they went straight to the market-place, and there set themselves in array. The Earl had then sent a knight of his, called Sir Robert Mareschault, to the gate, to see what they of Ghent did; and when he came to the gate he found it beaten down, and the enemy masters of the passage: and some of them of Bruges met with him, and said — ‘ Sir Robert, return and save yourself if you can, for the town is in the possession of our enemies.’ Then the knight returned to the Earl as fast as he could, who was coming out of his lodging on horseback, with a great number of cressets and torches with him, and was going to the market-place; and as he was entering, such as were before him seeing their enemies all ranged in the place, said to the Earl — ‘ Sir, return again; if you go any farther you will be killed or taken by your enemies, for they are ranged in the market-place, and wait for you.’ They shewed him truth. And when the conquerors saw those clear lights coming down the street, they said — ‘ Yonder cometh the Earl, he will fall into our hands.’ And Philip D’Arteville had commanded, from street to street, as he went, that if the Earl came among them, no man should do to him any bodily harm, but take him alive, and then have him to Ghent, and so to make their peace as they pleased. . . . The Earl, who hoped to have recovered all, came near to the place where they of Ghent were. Then divers of his men said — ‘ Sir, go no further, for your enemies are lords of the market-place and of the town; if you enter into the market-place, you are in danger of being taken or slain: a great number of your enemies are going from street to street, seeking their enemies; they have certain of them of the town



to conduct them from house to house, where they would be; and, Sir, you cannot issue out of any of the gates, for the enemy is possessed of them; nor can you return to your own lodging, for your enemies are going thither.' And when the Earl heard those tidings, which much distressed him, as may be imagined, he was greatly alarmed, and considered the danger he was in. Then he believed the council, and would go no farther, but endeavour to save himself; and so he took his own council. He commanded all the lights to be put out; and said to them that were about him — 'I see well there is no recovery; let every man depart, and save himself as well as he can.' And it was done as he commanded; the lights were quenched and cast into the street, and every man departed. The Earl then went into a back lane, and made a varlet of his to unarm him, and cast away his armor, and put on an old cloak of his varlet's, and then said to him — 'Go thy way from me, and save yourself if you can; and have a good tongue if you fall into the hands of your enemies; and if they ask any thing of me, do not acknowledge that I am in the town.' He answered and said — 'Sir, I had rather die than betray you.' . . . . Thus about the hour of midnight the Earl went from street to street and by back lanes, so that at last he was fain to take a house, or else he had been taken by his enemies; and so as he went about the town, he entered into a poor woman's house, which was not fit for such a lord: there was neither hall, parlor, nor chamber; it was a poor smoky house; there was nothing but one poor place, black with smoke, and above a small rooin with a ladder of seven steps to go up to it; and in that room was a mean couch, where the poor woman's children lay. Then the Earl, much alarmed and trembling, said as he entered — 'O good woman save me! I am thy lord, the Earl of Flanders; but now I must hide myself, for my enemies pursue me; and if you do me a service now, I shall reward you for it hereafter.' The poor woman knew him well, for she had been often at his gate to fetch alms, and had often seen him going and returning from sporting; so she immediately consented, for if she had made any delay, he had been taken talking with her by the fire. Then she said — 'Sir, mount up this ladder, and

lay yourself under the bed you find there, where my children sleep.' And in the mean time the woman sat down by the fire with another child, that she had in her arms. So the Earl mounted the ladder as well as he could, and crept between the couch and the straw, and lay as flat as possible. And immediately some of his enemies entered the house, for some of them said they had seen a man enter the house before them; and so they found the woman sitting at the fire with her child. Then they said — 'Good woman, where is the man we saw enter this house before us, and shut the door after him?' 'Sirs,' quoth she, 'I saw no man enter here this night: I went out just now and cast out a little water, and shut my door again. If any were here, I could not hide him; you see all my house at once; here is my bed, and up this ladder lie my poor children.' Then one of them took a candle and mounted up the ladder, and looked and saw only the poor couch where the children lay asleep; and so he looked all about, and then said to his company — 'Let us go hence, we are losing time: the poor woman speaks the truth, here is no creature but she and her children:' and then they departed out of the house. After that, there was none entered to do any hurt. All these words the Earl heard well, while he lay under the couch: you may suppose he was in great fear for his life. He might well say — 'I am now one of the poorest princes in the world: how uncertain are the affairs of this world!' Yet it was fortunate he escaped with his life: howbeit this dangerous adventure might well be to him a memorial all his life after, and an example to all others." — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cxxxi.

The Earl's final escape is thus told: —

"I was informed, and I believe it to be true, that on the Sunday at night the Earl of Flanders issued out of the town of Bruges, by what means I cannot say, but I believe he was assisted. He issued out all alone on foot, in an old simple cloak; and when he came into the fields he was glad, for then he thought he had escaped great danger; so he went forth at a venture, and stopped at a thick bush, to see what way he might take, for he knew not the ways, nor was he accustomed to travel on foot: and as he stood under the bush, he heard by chance a man speak as he

came by, and it was a knight of his, called Sir Robert Mareschault, who had married his bastard daughter. The Earl knew him by his voice, and as he passed by he said — ‘Robert, are you there?’ The knight, who knew the Earl by his speech, said — ‘Ah, Sir, I have been seeking for you this day in many places about Bruges: how did you get out?’ ‘Let us go our way,’ quoth the Earl, ‘It is not time to tell our adventures; I pray you let us endeavour to get a horse, for I am greatly fatigued with going on foot, and I pray you let us take the way to Lisle, if you know it.’ ‘Yes, Sir,’ replied the knight, ‘I know it well;’ and so they travelled till the next morning without being able to get a horse; but they found a mare, which they took from a poor man in a village, and on which the Earl rode without saddle or pannel, and at night came to Lisle, where the greatest part of his knights had arrived who fled from the field, some on foot and some on horseback.” — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cxxxii.

Notwithstanding the orders which Froissart relates to have been given by Van Artevelde to take the Earl alive, and not do him any bodily harm, he says, in another place, that had he been taken his life would have been in danger. If any danger was to be apprehended, it was probably rather from the accidents of tumult and disorder than from any deliberate purpose to put him to death. About a century later the people of Ghent are thus spoken of by Commines: — “Après le peuple du Liege, il n’en est nul plus inconstant que ceulx de Gand. Une chose ont ils assez honneste, selon leur mauvaistie: car à la personne de leur Prince ne touchèrent jamais.” — *Lib. ii.*, chap. iv.

PART I., Act V., Last Scene, Page 237

“*As ye were brave, so be ye temperate now.*”

“No people ever acted more mildly with their enemies than they of Ghent did with them of Bruges; for they did no injury to any man of the small crafts of the town, unless he was greatly accused. When Philip D’Arteville and the captains of Ghent saw that they were Lords of Bruges, and all was at their command, then they made proclamation that every man, on pain of death,

should draw to his lodging, and not plunder, or make any disturbance, unless they were commanded." — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cxxxii.

PART II., Act I., Scene I., Page 12.

*"Enter the King with a hawk on his hand."*

The partiality of this boy-king for hawking, may be inferred from his dreams: —

"It happened while the King lay at Senlis, one night as he was asleep in bed, he had a vision. It seemed to him clearly that he was in the city of Arras, where he had never been before, and with him were all the most valiant men of France; and he thought that there came to him the Earl of Flanders, and presented him with a fine falcon pelerin, saying to him — 'Sir, I give you this falcon, as the best that ever I saw, for pursuing and destroying of fowls.' Of this present the King thought he had great joy, and said — 'My dear cousin, I thank you.' And therewith he thought he regarded the Constable of France, Sir Oliver Clisson, and said unto him, — 'Sir Oliver, let us two go into the fields to prove this excellent falcon that my cousin of Flanders hath given me.' And then he thought the Constable said to him — 'Sir, let us go when it pleases you.' And so then he thought that they took their horses, they two alone, and went into the fields and found plenty of herons to pursue. Then the King said — 'Constable let the falcon fly, and we shall see how she will pursue her game.' Then the Constable cast off the falcon, and she mounted so high into the air that they could hardly see her; and the King thought that she proceeded directly towards Flanders. Then the King said — 'Let us ride after my bird, I should be sorry to lose her.' And so he thought they rode after her till they came to a great marsh and a thick wood; which being unable to pass on horseback, they alighted: and then he thought that servants came to them and took their horses. And so the King and the Constable entered into the wood with great difficulty, and travelled so long that they came to a fine piece of land; and there the King thought he saw his falcon chasing herons, and fighting with them, and they with him; and

it appeared to the King that his falcon pursued the herons till at last he lost sight of her, wherewith he thought he felt much disappointed, seeing that he could not follow his hawk; and he thought he said to the Constable — ‘ Ah, I fear I shall lose my falcon, whereof I am sorry, and I have nothing to allure her back.’ While in this difficulty, the King thought there appeared before him, a great hart with wings, and inclined himself before him whereof he had great joy, and thought he said to his Constable — ‘ Remain here, Sir, and I will mount on this hart, and so follow my falcon.’ And so the King thought he mounted this flying hart, which, according to his desire, bore him over all the great woods and trees, and there he saw his falcon beating down a vast number of fowls; and then it appeared to the King, when his falcon had destroyed many herons, that he called her, and the falcon immediately came and settled on his hand: and then the hart flew again over the woods, and brought the King to the same land where the Constable tarried for him, who was very glad of his return: and as soon as he was alighted, he thought the hart departed, and then he never after saw him. And so there the King thought he told the Constable that the hart had borne him more easily than ever he had ridden before; and also he thought he told him of the success of his falcon. And therewith it seemed to him that his servants came to them and brought them their horses, and they mounted and took the highway, and so returned to Arras. And therewith the King awoke, and was much amazed at that vision, and he remembered every thing thereof perfectly well, and he shewed it to them of his chamber that were about him. And the figure of this hart pleased him so much, that all his imagination was set thereon. And this was one of the first circumstances that occasioned him when he went into Flanders to fight against the Flemings, to bear in his arms the flying hart.” — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cxxxvii.

PART II., Act II., Scene I., Page 37.

“ *We have been too successful to be safe  
In standing still.*”

When Vespasian was so favorably situated that no one would

believe him to be without designs upon the purple, Mucianus explained to him, in a few words, the dangers of moderation: "Abiit jam, et transvectum est tempus, quo posses videri concupisse: *confugiendum est ad imperium.*" — *Tac. Hist.*, ii. 76. Machiavelli, who studied Tacitus for his philosophy as diligently as he consulted Livy for his facts, generalizes the observation: "Ne possono gli uomini che hanno qualità eleggere lo starsi, quando bene lo ellegessino veramente, et senza alcuna ambitione; perche non è loro creduto; tal che se si vogliono star loro, non sono lasciati stare da altri." — *Discorsi*, iii. 2.

Hobbes would seem to have had this passage in his memory when he wrote as follows: "Because there be some that taking pleasure in contemplating their own power in the acts of conquest which they pursue farther than their security requires; if others, that otherwise would be glad to be at ease within modest bounds, should not by invasion increase their power, they would not be able, long time, by standing only on their defence, to subsist. And by consequence, such augmentation of dominion over men, being necessary to a man's conservation, it ought to be allowed him." — *Leviathan*, Part i., chap. 13.

PART II., Act II., Scene II., Page 44.

"*The injury that disables is more wise  
Than that which stings.*"

In the preceding note I have cited one instance in which Machiavelli has developed, in a general maxim, the philosophy with which Tacitus seldom fails to impregnate the speeches which he represents to have been delivered on particular occasions. I am here tempted to quote another example. When the Belgic provinces rose against Vocula, and placed him in such extremity that he was urgently counselled to flight, the view of the matter which was taken by that severe and intrepid commander is expressed in these words: "Nunc hostes, quia molle servitium: cum spoliati, exutique fuerint, amicos fore." — Machiavelli, in his exposition of the various means for retaining conquered and distant territories in obedience, makes a maxim of the same policy: "Si ha à notare, che li uomini si debbono, ò

vezzezzigare, ò spegnere; perche si vendicano delle leggieri offese, delle gravi non possono." — *Principe*, cap. iii.

PART II., Act III., Scene II., Page 78.

*" In his youth*

*Famed for his great desire of doing evil*

*He was elected into Testenoire's troop*

*Of free companions."*

" Geoffrey Testenoire," says Froissart, " was a cruel man, and void of feeling, and *would as soon kill a knight or squire as a villain.*" — Vol. ii., chap. clxxi. Testenoire, however, was in the regular service of the English King, and it is perhaps doing him some injustice to represent him as the leader of a free company. Of the manner in which such a company was formed, and the qualifications required in its captain, the following is a lively account. The parties are certain English and Gascon auxiliaries of the King of Portugal, and their pay was in arrear: — " then they began to speak, and make their complaints to each other; and among them there was a knight, a bastard brother of the King of England, called Sir John Sounder, who was very bold in speaking, and said, ' The Earl of Cambridge hath brought us hither; we are always ready to venture our lives for him, and yet he withholdeth our wages: I counsel, let us all be of one accord, and let us among ourselves raise up the banner of St. George, and be friends to God and enemies to all the world; for unless we make ourselves feared, we shall get nothing.' — ' By my faith,' quoth Sir William Helman, ' you speak well, and so let us do.' They all agreed with one voice, and so considered among themselves who should be their captain. Then they agreed that in this case *they could not have a better captain than Sir John Sounder, for he had then great desire to do evil, and they thought him more competent thereto than any other.*" — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cxxiv.

PART II., Act III., Scene III., Page 86

*" Pain and grief*

*Are transitory things no less than joy,*

*And though they leave us not the men we were,*

*Yet they do leave us. You behold me here  
 A man bereaved, with something of a blight  
 Upon the early blossoms of his life  
 And its first verdure, having not the less  
 A living root, and drawing from the earth  
 Its vital juices, from the air its powers :  
 And surely as man's health and strength are whole  
 His appetites regerminate, his heart  
 Re-opens, and his objects and desires  
 Shoot up renewed."*

The mixed state of feeling which is expressed or implied in this and other passages in the same scene, has been characteristically treated by South, in his comments upon "Sorrow for Sin." — "As Solomon says, 'in the midst of laughter the heart is sorrowful,' so in the midst of sorrow here, the heart may rejoice: for while it mourns, it reads, that those that mourn shall be comforted; and so while the penitent weeps with one eye, he views his deliverance with the other. But then for the external expressions and vent of sorrow, we know that there is a certain pleasure in weeping; it is the discharge of a big and swelling grief, of a full and strangling discontent; and therefore he that never had such a burthen upon his heart as to give him opportunity thus to ease it, has one pleasure in this world yet to come."

Reading this with the free mind and easy acceptance which should be brought to the perusal of what concerns the moral affections, no one can fail to understand what it means, and feel the truth as well as the liveliness of the remark. It may be worth while, however, to take the exception to it, to which it is logically liable, for the sake of the metaphysical proposition which it involves. If the matter be stated strictly, then, the admixture of better feelings with the sorrow can only be so far a recommendation, as the sorrow is thereby not so bad as it might be; but so far as the thing is taken as an individual entity and properly called a sorrow, it must be qualified by the term which belongs to the balance of its constituent feelings, and called painful. In a series of sensations whereof the first is



the *most* painful, and the rest follow in constantly mitigated succession, the first only may be as a pain, and the rest as pleasures, to the patient or sentient; *these* being felt as pleasures relatively to *that* the foregoing excess of pain; though all *absolute* pains, *i. e.* pains relatively to a state of indifference — all and singular of them substantive pains — all as comprehending that first excess in virtue of which only any pass for pleasures — each singularly taken, because, taken without relation to its antecedents, the object of comparison with each is of course a state of indifference. In the reversal of this order of succession, the feelings passing from less to more intense, instead of from more to less, is to be found the root of the distinction between the pains of sorrow and those of anxiety, and the cause of the preference to be given, *ceteris paribus*, to the former. Whilst I am upon such subjects I shall easily be excused for presenting the reader with another extract from South — an extract of so much as relates to joy and sorrow, from that writer's admirable description of the affections of man, such as they were before his fall from a state of innocence: — “ In the next place for the lightsome passion of *Joy*. It was not that which now often usurps this name; that trivial, vanishing, superficial thing, that only gilds the apprehension, and plays upon the surface of the soul. It was not the mere crackling of thorns, a sudden blaze of the spirits, the exultation of a tickled fancy or a pleased appetite. Joy was then a masculine and a severe thing; the recreation of the judgment, the jubilee of reason. It was the result of a real good suitably applied. It commenced upon the solidities of truth, and the substance of fruition. It did not run out in voice, or undecent eruptions, but filled the soul, as God does the universe, silently and without noise. It was refreshing but composed; like the pleasantness of youth tempered with the gravity of age; or the mirth of a festival managed with the silence of contemplation. And, on the other side, for *Sorrow*. Had any loss or disaster made but room for grief, it would have moved according to the severe allowances of prudence, and the proportions of the provocation. It would not have sallied out into complaint or loudness, nor spread itself

upon the face, and writ sad stories upon the forehead. No wringing of the hands, knocking of the breast, or wishing oneself unborn; all which are but the ceremonies of sorrow, the pomp and ostentation of an effeminate grief: which speak not so much the greatness of the misery, as the smallness of the mind. Tears may spoil the eyes, but not wash away the affliction. Sighs may exhaust the man, but not eject the burthen. Sorrow *then* would have been as silent as thought, as severe as philosophy."

PART II., Act IV., Scene II., Page 112.

"and oh!

*That Constable! oh, Oliver of Clisson!  
That such a man as thou at such a time  
Should hold the staff of Constable of France."*

I have represented Sir Oliver of Clisson according to the impression which his conduct in this campaign certainly appears to me calculated to convey. I have made him pliant and irresolute. It should be observed, however, that the history of other wars in which he bore a most conspicuous part, ascribes to him no such weaknesses; and to his character for vigor of one kind his soubriquet of 'Oliver the Butcher' bears testimony.

PART II., Act V., Scene III., Page 180.

*"Once in my sad and philosophic youth —  
For very philosophic in my dawn  
And twilight of intelligence was I —  
Once at this cock-crow of philosophy,  
Much tired with rest and with the stable earth,  
I launched my little bark and put to sea,  
Errant for geste and enterprise of wit  
Through all this circumnavigable globe."*

I have represented Van Artevelde, in this scene principally, and incidentally also elsewhere, as not forgetful of the studies of his earlier years; and although such studies were not common in the age in which he lived, and though in every age, men but

rarely carry such remembrances along with them after they have embarked in public life, yet the peculiar course of the life led by Van Artevelde, and the almost compulsory character of the exchange which he made of a meditative privacy for a military and political career, has appeared to me to render not unnatural the combination in his case, of thoughtfulness with the activity which his public station required of him. I revert to the subject here chiefly for the purpose of quoting a passage from Mr. Landor's "Imaginary Conversations," a work in my estimation more rich in thought, and brilliant in expression, than any that has been published of late years. "How many," says Sir Philip Sidney, one of the imaginary collocutors, "How many, who have abandoned for public life the studies of philosophy and poetry, may be compared to brooks and rivers, which in the beginning of their course have assuaged our thirst, and have invited us to tranquillity by their bright resemblance of it, and which afterwards partake the nature of that vast body into which they run, its dreariness, its bitterness, its foams, its storms, its everlasting noise and commotion! I have known several such, and when I have innocently smiled at them, their countenances seemed to say, — '*I wish I could despise you: but alas! I am a runaway slave, and from the best of mistresses to the worst of masters; I serve at a tavern where every hour is dinner-time, and pick a bone upon a silver dish.*'" I never recur to Mr. Landor's volumes without renewed admiration of his abilities, nor without the wish that his writings could be cleared from the tone of uncalled-for defiance, and unnecessary self-assertion which lowers them.

PART II., Act V., Scene III., Page 190.

*"A mother dotes upon the wreckling child  
More than the strong; solicitous cares, sad watchings,  
Rallies, reverses, all vicissitudes,  
Give the affection exercise and growth.  
So is it in the nursing a sick hope."*

This either is casually concurrent with the following passage in Madoc, or was unconsciously borrowed from it: —

“ Have I not nursed for two long wretched years  
That miserable hope, which every day  
Grew weaker, like a baby sick to death,  
Yet dearer for its weakness day by day.”

PART II., Act V., Scene V., Page 201.

“ ELENA.

“ *I could not sleep, and sate without the tent,  
And sudden from the river seemed to rise  
A din of battle, mixed with lengthened shouts  
That sounded hollow like a windy thaw.  
I looked, and in the cloudy western sky  
There was a glow of red, and then the cries  
Were less confused, and I believed I heard  
‘ Mount Joye, St. Denis!’ ‘ Flanders and the Lion!’  
With that I came to waken you.*”

I will extract here the picturesque and romantic passage in Froissart, upon which the above is founded:—

“ Thus when the Flemings were at rest in their lodgings, (howbeit they knew well their enemies were on the hill not more than a league from them,) Philip D’Arteville had brought a damsel with him out of Ghent; and as Philip lay and slept on a couch, by the side of a little fire of coals in a pavilion, this said damsel, about midnight, went out of the pavilion to take the air, and to see what time it appeared to be, for she could not sleep; she looked towards Rosebeque, and saw in the sky smoke and fire (it was the reflection of the fires the French made under hedges and bushes); this damsel hearkened, and thought she heard much noise between the two armies, and the French crying Mountjoy! St. Denis! and other cries; and this she thought was on Mount Dorre, between there and Rosebeque; of this thing she was much afraid, and so entered the pavilion, and suddenly awaked Philip, and said—‘ Sir, rise and arm yourself quickly, for I have heard a great noise on the Mount Dorre; I believe it is the French coming to attack you.’ With these words he rose and cast on his gown, took his axe in his

hand, and issued out of the pavilion to see what it was; and he heard the same noise the damsel had told him of, and it seemed to him that there was a great tournament on the said hill: then he immediately entered his pavilion, and caused his trumpet to be blown, when every man rose and armed himself. They of the watch immediately sent to Philip D'Arteville, to know why he stirred up the host, seeing there was no cause, for that they had sent to the enemy's host, and there was nothing stirring. 'What, then,' said Philip, 'was that noise on Mount Dorre?' 'Sir,' said they, 'we heard the same, and sent to know what it was, but they that went said that when they went they heard nor saw nothing; therefore, Sir, we did not rouse the army, for we should have been blamed if we had done so without a cause.' And when they of the watch had told Philip this, he appeased himself and all the host; but yet he was astonished at this phenomenon. Some said it was fiends of hell, who played there where the battle was to be the next day, for joy of the great prey they were likely to have there." — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cl.

PART II., Act V., Scene, XI., Page 215.

*" Oh for a wound as wide as famine's mouth,  
To make a soldier's passage for my soul."*

" So these men of arms pressed so closed upon the Flemings, that they could not defend themselves; so there were many that lost their strength and breath, and fell upon each other, and were pressed to death, without striking any stroke: and there was Philip D'Arteville wounded and beaten down among his men of Ghent; and when his page with his horse saw that his master was defeated, he departed and left his master, for he could not render him any assistance, and so rode to Courtray, on the way to Ghent. . . . . Thus when the battle was ended, they at last left the pursuit, and trumpets sounded the retreat. . . . . 'Then the king said to them that were about him, 'Sirs, I wish to see Philip D'Arteville, whether he be alive or dead.' They answered that they would do their best to gratify

him. And then it was proclaimed through the host that whoever could find Philip D'Arteville, should have a hundred francs for his labor. Then many went among the dead bodies, who were most all stripped of their clothes; at last there was such search made that he was found and known by a varlet who had served him long before, and he recognised him by many tokens; so he was brought before the king's pavilion, and the king and all the lords beheld him for some time; and the body was examined, to see what wounds he had, but they could see none that appeared to be mortal; but it was judged that he fell in a little dike, and many of them of Ghent upon him, and was so pressed to death." — *Froissart*, vol. ii., chap. cliii., cliv.

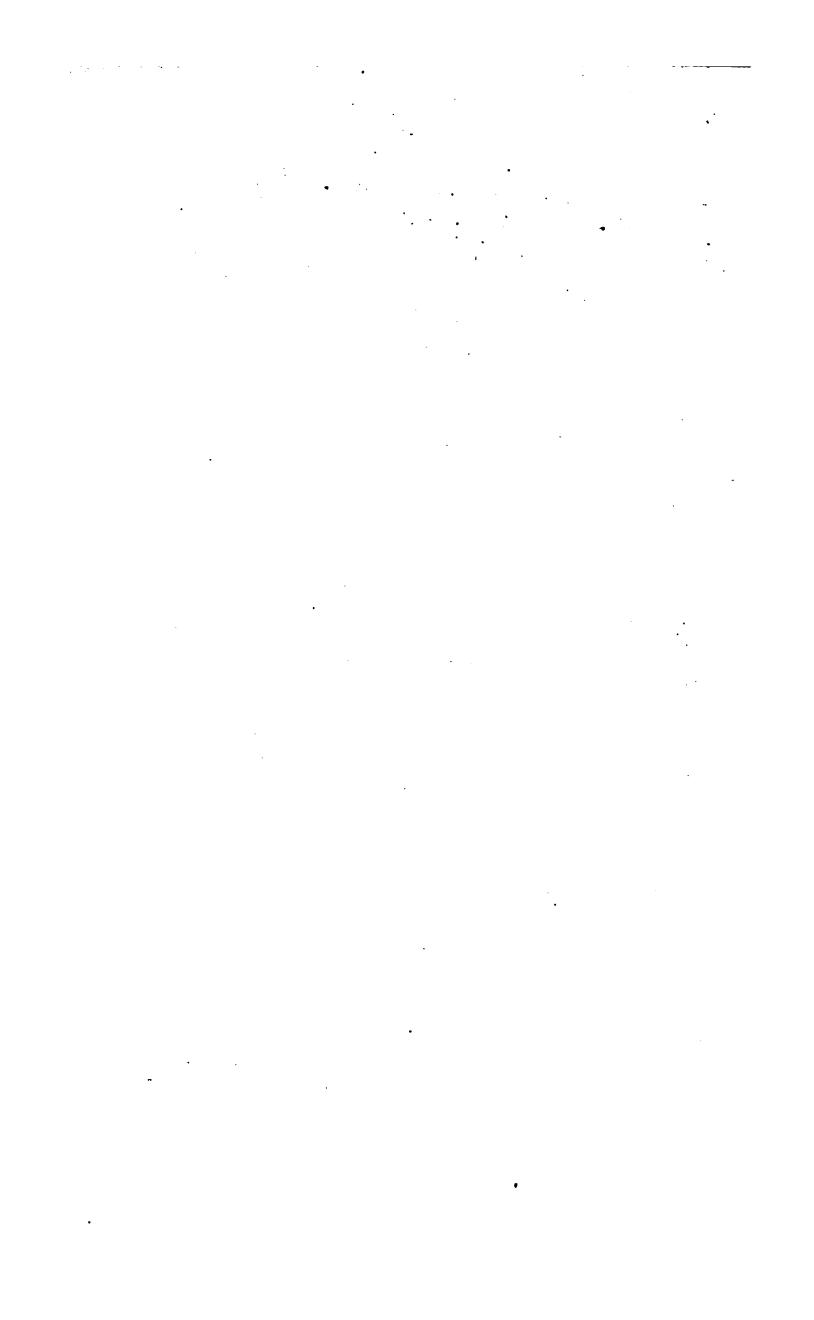
PART II., Act V., Scene last, Page 222.

*“ Wolf of the weald and yellow-footed kite,  
Enough is left for you of meaner prey.”*

“ More bodies were left on the field for the yellow-footed kite and the eagle and the grizzly wolf of the weald than had fallen under the edge of the sword in any battle since the Angles and Saxons first came over the broad sea,” is the account given by an Anglo-Saxon poet, of the carnage at the battle of Brunnburgh, A. D. 938. It is quoted by Mr. Southey, whose unequalled command of the materials which poetry supplies for the elucidation of history, is no where more apparent than in the work in which this quotation occurs, the *Naval History of England*.

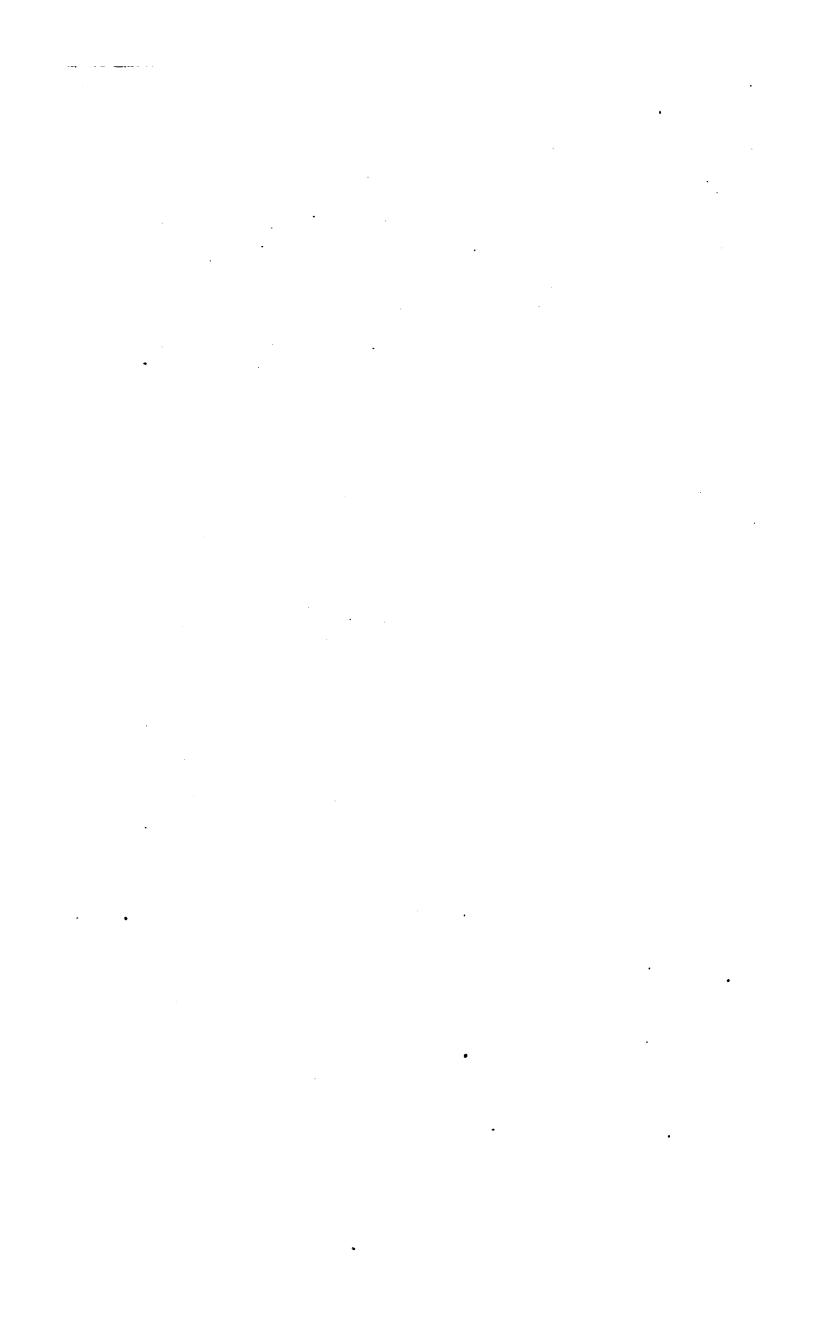
---

CAMBRIDGE PRESS:  
METCALF, TORRY, AND BALLOU.









**THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT**

**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
|  |  |  |
|  |  |  |
|  |  |  |
|  |  |  |

